

## Prologue

Spring. January.

Preparing my gear and ready everything.

As usual, I will have my everyday routine— a morning jog with my little sis and my magical pet.

“Both of you done yet?”

“Coming~ big brother~~”

“Ready master~”

As I open the large wooden door of my house, a strong gust of wind blew in very soon along with some flapping noise.

“...It’s unusually windy today, big brother.”

My little sis is still as sharp as ever, already taking up her guard from an unexpected guest that arrived so soon.

The very view in front of me that caught my eye the most—the noisy helicopter that’s still have its propeller spinning. It’s the cause of the wind today.

A man in a black suit with a necktie jumped off from the helicopter that just landed.

Even though he’s still far away, but I can tell that he’s in his twenties, walking closer and closer to my house.

At the very least, based on his actions, I’m sure he’s not a person with bad intentions.

Sending signals by moving my hand, I asked the two little girls to stand down.

Now then, who are you and what do you want?

“Finally...! I found you at last...!” He cried, with a painful and desperate look.

I intend to hit him for simply barging into someone’s else home. But—

He reached out his arms, grabbing both of my hands tightly then he shook it a few times.

Who is he? Why did he come all the way here...? I wondered.

Suddenly— he kneeled on the ground, and cried.

“I have been searching you for months and this is where you live?! An island full of dangerous monsters!?”

I didn’t expect that he’d kneel down after that.

Are you trying to pick a fight? You have a problem with someone living on an island with full of monsters!?

He's such a rude person, simply barging into someone's else territory with a helicopter.

"Shouldn't you state your name and tell me what's your purpose?" As I reminded him, I can feel the corner of my mouth twitched upwards out of irritation.

"PLEASE!!! I beg of you!!! Please be a special student at the Imperial Knights Academy or else I will be fired!!!"

"Huh...?"

Feeling shocked, surprised and confused at the same time, I quickly turned my head towards my little sis and my magical pet, seeing their heads shaking vigorously— telling me not to go.

...an executive member of the world famous Imperial Knights Academy is kneeling and begging me to join.

But whether he is fired from his job or not, it doesn't matter to me.

I need to know why. What is he hiding?

"Why me? I'm just an ordinary 16 year old guy that doesn't even go to school."

"I want to know that too! But that principal won't tell me why...!"

What's with this strange reasoning...? It doesn't seem like he's lying... his tears is too much for me.

"Leave, I will give you a reply through your email."

He quickly send me an invitation email with his phone number included. But, he doesn't seems too pleased with just that.

"Please! You mu—"

BAM!

Not letting him to bother me anymore, I slammed the door shut.

[Beep]

Just by the time I intended to take out my phone, it vibrated.

I received a message, not an email.

Not a single message for six years so why is it vibrating again now...?

I opened a window and open the message. It was sent from an unknown source.

'Join the Imperial Knights Academy. Your problems will be solved there.'

What is this...? How come... it's so sure about it that my problems will be solved?

There's still more...

'No matter how your little sister and magical pet stop you, you need to go no matter what.'

Both of them...? Stop me...? How?

"No!!! Big brother you can't!!!"

"Master you can't go to that dangerous place!!!"

Those two quickly hugged me tight as if it was the last time.

For six years they behaved like a glue... always attached to me, of course they wouldn't want me to leave.

Ugh...! Those tears, weeping and crying expressions...! Who send such a future predicted message...?!

'Do what you can in there, and I'm sure that everything will go as I expected.'

Who on earth are you...?!

'P.S. You don't need to know who I am.'

Indeed, you are far too scary to send such a future predicted message.

.....What about my morning jog...?

## **Chapter 1: The first person, Lucifer Nightwalker**

Summer. June.

Outside the school gates.

...Finally. After the long hellish ride in the helicopter...

I finally arrived at the very place— the Imperial Knights Academy.

...It's been ages since the last time I went to school.

What's with this uncomfortable feeling...? Am I... feeling nervous...?

Well, of course. After all, starting from today, it is a place that I will attend starting today and my first time living here alone... for six months.

Stop, take a deep breath.

Ok, let's go!

.....

It's empty. I wonder why the outer school gates feels so isolated.

After I took my first step of courage and stepped inside, there's not a single soul to greet me. The only thing I can feel here, is the summer breeze.

At the very least, shouldn't they get somebody to guide me here...?

Whatever. Better continue walking.

The main path leads to the great hall of the academy, where the entrance ceremony is held. But since I'm six months late because of some family issues, I was told to take the smaller path on the right from the pilot, where he left. I wonder why.

The current time would still be regarded as the early morning, and birdsong echoed through the boardwalk surrounded by bright green trees. Such a scenery, it can be said that it was abundantly favoured with nature's grace.

As I walked on the smaller path, I checked the time from the small screen that I opened.

It's 8.13am. Still a little early till my appointed time and location.

Now then... what should I do?

Perhaps taking a stroll around here might be able to kill some time. But—

-----where am I?

I looked around, checking my surroundings.

There`s nothing but trees here providing shades from the strong ray of the early summer sun, and a building, not too far away from me. And so, there`s only one conclusion, that is—

...I`m lost.

How embarrassing.

The site was so large that I`m in a loss of my current location.

As a strong wind blows, I can hear the rustling sound of the trees.

But there`s another rustling sound that was way different than any other trees. It caught my attention.

Hmm...? A pink tree?

2 o`clock, several hundred meters behind the building. There`s a large pink tree on top of a hill. By large, it`s size really is enormous.

I have a feeling that the tree is leading me to something.

...Maybe I can search for the appointed location up there.

Thinking that, I sprint towards that tree.

.....

“Wow...”

The moment I reached at the base if the tree, I felt amazed.

This... is truly spectacular.

This tree has resemblance to a cherry blossom, the only difference were its size and dropping pink lights.

Although I`m not the type of elegant, classy sort of person to stop and appreciate the beautiful sight, but it was just so beautiful that I couldn`t help myself to be mesmerized, even though I got lost.

It`s so tall. Roughly around... 4km high?

Huh. Around five times of my 174cm height for footing?

I wasn`t trying to brag. But since I`m special, so it shouldn`t be a problem.

“Alright then...”

Go!

With a simple jump, I leaped myself away from the grassy ground.

“Whoosh...” As I grazed across the flowers, this sound came across my ears as I dived into the tree.

“Hup.”

I landed safely on a large thick branch.

“...!”

The moment that I get a clearer sight, I was inadvertently fascinated by it.

The inside of this tree has such a large space.

Not only that, it provides a comfortable atmosphere, where relaxing and enjoying a picnic here would be rather nice.

Alright, enough sightseeing. I should look around now.

“.....”

The flowers here are too thick. Can't see anything.

I guess I should continue to jump higher up then.

.....

Gosh. I still can't see anything from here too. What should I do...?

“Whoosh...” As I'm starting to get anxious, a sound that seems familiar came across my ears.

It's similar to the moment when I dived myself into this tree.

Hearing this, I'm sure that somebody's here. Student or teacher, surely he's more familiar with this academy than me.

Where is he...? Ah, a shadow.

Without a second thought, I jumped downwards to where that person is standing, hoping to ask for directions.

As I approach closer and closer towards that shadow, I felt even more nervous.

What will he think about a strange person like me...?

He's there, the thick branch below...!

I landed in front of him, bending in my knees.

“Ah, um..... I'm kind of lost so—”

As I stood up and asked, I awkwardly scratched my head. Because of nervousness, I didn't look at him at all.

“...Huh...?”

This voice... a girl...!?

I didn't expect 'him' to be a girl.

Even if it was just a small second, her beautiful voice makes me can't help it but to be spell bounded.

Ugh...! Snap out of it!

Forcing myself back to reality after a split second, I realized the situation between us is too sudden.

I haven't been able get a clear view to look at her face. She might be thinking 'why is there someone here?'

'How does she look like? Is she cute?' I wondered.

My little sis and magical pet are plenty cute already. There's no way I'm lucky enough to meet an even cuter girl—

“.....!”

The moment that I fixed my eyes at the girl standing in front of me, both my mind and body froze.

Even if the world had ended, she would still most certainly be standing there, even if there was no footing to stand on. That was the illusion she gave, so much that it was like a scene from a painting.

The presence and beauty of her was just so overwhelming that it suppressed that of any other object.

Her long, black, flowing ebony hair, like a plume of smoke, weaved around her shoulder and waist.

Coldly just looking at me, her eyes were of a strange, hard to describe bluish colour.

Her elegant figure, which would make even a goddess feel envious, was warped by weariness as she stood silently with pursed lips.

She was a gentle-looking girl who had a beautiful face and dignified aura that made her look like she's finally free from secular affairs.

I was inadvertently fascinated by it.

My vision;

My attention;

Even my heart;

—in that moment, they were stolen away.

That girl was so...

Extremely;

Abnormally;

So intensely;

Beautiful.



So beautiful.....

.....

Having to patiently wait for some time, that girl narrowed her large eyes, as if to half-close them and let out a cold sigh. Then, with a voice like the murmuring of a clear stream, she spoke to me.

“.....How about you stop standing there and just state your business already?”

“...Huh? Oh, yeah. Sorry.”

It was probably because I was staring at her for too long, she furrowed her brows in displeasure and stared right back at me.

“Actually I just transferred here today and I got lost, can you show me the way to the Student Council President’s office?”

As I asked, I nervously smiled to her.

“.....”

In response, that girl expressed her annoyance by placing a hand on her temple, as though she had a headache.

She glared at me as though I was a mere bug, till our eyes met.

I can see that her eyes widen in surprise.

Is there something weird on me? I wondered.

“...could it be?” that girl whispers in a very small voice, averting her eyes away from me with her cheeks redden.

She then continued.

“...Sorry... but you need to have a duel with me, now.” As she said, she stared back at me.

I wonder why, but her eyes seems to be hoping for something.

“I decline.” I replied.

It’d be troublesome if I cause such a huge mess in my first day. I better avoid any trouble as much as possible. Besides... to fight a girl is a little too much for me.

“...seems I have no choice.” She murmured.

Judging from her tone, I guess she already anticipated this.

She held out her right hand to the Imperial Knights Academy's school badge, adorning her chest.

“...I, Kuroyuki Shiroha hereby challenge you, Lucifer Vermillion, to a forced duel.”

Eh...? Forced duel...!?

Forced duel is a duelling system that requires the opponent to battle the requester till either one of them are knocked out. I read this from the special rule of the Imperial Knights Academy.

W-Wait a minute!

By the time I tried to escape from her effective range, a screen pops out in mid-air between us.

‘ERROR. OPPONENT DOES NOT EXIST.’ Is what that was written.

I heaved a sigh of enlightenment.

Why it stated that? Didn’t I registered my name into the system?

.....Lucifer... Vermillion...? No, that’s not my name.

“.....it isn’t you...” That girl, said with an extremely tired voice.

She gave another small sigh, making a face which seemed like tears might come out at any moment.

Her adverting eyes are so fully filled with disappointment and sadness.

...I stood there, silently.

Seeing her expression, my heart felt like it’s being squeezed tightly.

Realizing there’s a person standing in front of her, she rubbed her eyes with her right hand, then she gave me a quick once-over cold look.

Closing her eyes, she let out a small sigh, as if to recall something troublesome.

“...It was that building.” She murmured.

By that, I understand that she’s referring to the closest building— the building that I came across a little while ago.

Come to think of it, why didn’t I enter the building and ask for directions?

But thanks to that, I explored such a beautiful place and met a beautiful girl.

“Thank— Ah.”

Before I could thank her, she didn’t show me another ounce of concern. As proof of that, she turned away from me and jumped down.

Now then... Why did she come all the way up here?

As I recalled back, I realized that she’s carrying something on her left hand. It’s a lunchbox.

Is it because of me she's leaving so soon? I spoiled her mood for breakfast didn't I?

Seriously, her taste is similar to mine. If it's me, I would also come all the way here too to enjoy breakfast.

...I hope we could be friends.

...Perhaps not, it wouldn't be that easy after all.

Can I even make friends here...?

Feeling perplexed in how my school life would turn out to be, I deliberately sighed.

It's 8.23am. I should be going now.

"...N..."

As I intend to jump down, I instantly stopped as I heard a familiar icy-like voice from below.

Is that from her?

She seems to be in some sort of trouble.

No, wait. This isn't a romantic school life after all.

By the way, did she jump all the way up here...? If that's the case, I shouldn't lump her into the same group as a weak girl that needed help like a princess.

Furthermore, she demanded a forced duel just like that. She might be a student listed in the top 10 in this academy...

On the contrary, it should be interesting to see what is going happen.

"Hup...!"

I jumped down, brushing across the flowers of the tree.

Ah. I saw her... It's so cold!?

After the thick flowers, I saw her. But yet a sudden gust of cold wind engulfed me during my landing, sending chills to my spine. This coldness doesn't suit to be summer at all.

"...Ice storm."

It's from her again...

By the time I successfully landed, I sensed a dreadfully cold dense atmosphere around my surroundings. I'm sure that the temperature had dropped at least ten degrees.

Unable to shake this uneasy feeling, I quickly raised my head and took a quick glance.

On my left, I saw the girl I met earlier. She's barehanded but she extended her right thumb, index and middle finger— pointing towards her opposite side. Her eyes are glaring towards that direction with a serious expression too.

Curious on what she's glaring and pointing at, I quickly scanned the area on my right— her opposite side.

I saw five male students in their brown colour uniforms, holding different weapons on their hands. But yet, their expression looks stiff and visibly terrified.

This doesn't seem like a duel at all.

Although it's pretty clear that the girl is clearly stronger, but why do I still have this uneasy feeling inside me...?

I unconsciously remember those two words that I heard.

...Something's not right. I need to dodge! Now...!

I skipped backwards with haste.

"Whoa!?" I inadvertently let out my voice in surprise.

A large amount of ice and snow bursts and hurls towards the five students. Speaking of which, her ice nearly grazed my foot.

After the ice crackling sound stopped, the scene was left with lots of ice and snow. On the girl's opposite side—the five male students ended up frozen in several large ice block.

That looks... painful. It's lucky that I avoided from it.

She's strong... as expected. But yet, what she used isn't magic.

I can't sense any mana flowing out from her nor saw any magic circles appearing... and the words she murmured earlier doesn't seemed like incantations...

All of this only leads to one thing that explains her power. She's an Ice Elemental User— a <Star-Revolution Generation>.

<Star-Revolution Generation>.

A generation that possess a phenomenal ability that was based on the element they have.

Judging from those bursting ice that she used earlier, there's no doubt that she would be an <Ice type Elemental User>.

<Star-Revolution Generation> are quite rare around the world. Their numbers were just around twenty thousand, at most. But due to their power, they are quite well known throughout the world.

But, how was the <Star-Revolution Generation> was born?

All of this started from 20 years ago.

20 years ago, eight meteors of different colour, also known as the 'Rainbow Drops of Calamity' rained down from the sky.

The eight meteorites landed in different places around the world, releasing a killing effect that started to wipe out many species except humans.

Although humans were unaffected by the effects, but as long as anyone that steps foot inside a certain range from the meteors, they'd perish to dust nonetheless.

But strangely, there's only nine individuals that were unaffected by the meteors as they stepped inside. To be exact, the meteors chose them, granting them powers that was far easier to use than any elemental magic.

Those nine individuals are known as the <First Star-Revolution Generations>.

Fire, water, ice, wood, wind, lightning, earth, light and the special one, darkness.

Except the darkness <First Star-Revolution Generation>, the other <First Star-Revolution Generation> were able to 'gift' others. By transferring some of their powers into others, they possess the elemental powers same as them.

But in terms of strength, the <First Star-Revolution Generation> are stronger.

By the way, don't you find it strange to have nine <First Star-Revolution Generation> instead of eight? It was mentioned that there's only eight meteors, so why there's nine of them?

As I mentioned, darkness is the special one. It's meteorite turned into a small speck of dust. There aren't any craters found by anyone.

The eight of them are very famous during that time, except for the darkness type. Many species and races went all the way to their places just to gain power.

But yet, all of the nine <First Star-Revolution Generation> disappeared 17 years ago. Till now, not a single news about their whereabouts.

But still, there are several races and species gained power from them before their disappearance. Their offspring are able to inherit only one single type of their powers.

To think that I had actually so far come in contact with an ice elemental user.

As the moment I tried to leave and pretend that I have seen nothing, the beautiful girl— that almost killed me noticed me.

"...Another one? Die." She glared towards my direction with a cold look.

That girl swayed her right hand towards me from a distance, with her thumb, index and middle finger sticking out.

A large amount of ice and snow hurled towards me like a storm, at least 3 meters tall.

“WAH!!?” I`m totally freaked out.

...My heart isn`t ready yet.

Instead of skipping backwards, I instinctively charged forth.

Gripping my right fist tightly, I mustered my strength on my legs and leaped forth.

“Tch...!”

I rammed my fist and punched a large hole on the middle of the ice and snow, made through it.

After the snow storm settled, I found myself standing on a pile of fresh snow.

“WAH!? S-SO COLD.....!”

Some of her ice sticks to my fist, and it`s continuing to freeze up— covering my right arm.

The sharp pain on my right fist transferred across my arm, till it went numb.

...Her ice is even colder than zero degrees. This is bad...!

I flicked my right hand in a fast speed, swinging away the ice that sticks to me.

“...How persistent.” She said, with an annoyed expression.

As soon as she raised her hand again, her eyes narrowed.

It`s getting colder again...!? I need to stop her...!

To prevent myself from getting into trouble, I quickly raise both of my arms.

“Whoa, hey! Just a minute! I`m not even one of them!”

“...I don`t care.”

So she knows that I`m not one of them? And just how unreasonable is she? I didn`t even do anything wrong...!

Huh...? Are those... spears...?

After the snowflakes gathered around her, twenty ice spears appeared, floating in mid-air.

“...Pierce.” She whispers.

The spears shoots to me with a momentum that was like a rocket.

It`s so fast...!

Given bare-handed and out of time to think, I caught the first spear that was flying towards me.

OW, C-COLD...! JUST HOW COLD ARE THESE THINGS!?

It was even colder compared to the snow storm before.

Making use of the spear that I caught, I spin to block the others that almost hit me.

Seeing that the situation isn't at her favour, she reached out her hand.

"...Burst." As she said, she clenched her fist.

"GARGH!!?"

All of her spears exploded in an instant. I'm hit.

ARGHH! IT'S SO COLD!!! IT DOESN'T FEEL LIKE SUMMER ANYMORE!!!

As I charge out from the mist made by the explosion, I dashed to a clearer area, escaping from her controllable area.

After I get a clearer view, my eyes widen in surprise as I couldn't believe what I saw.

Ice crystals... snowflakes...

The scene in front of me feels like nothing but winter.

.....It stings.

My right arm... it's frozen!?

Among the midst pure white ice and snow, I saw a single girl with black hair stood in the middle on the pile of fresh snow.

...It's her.

That girl continue to glare at me with eyes like 'just die already'.

The moment that I received her direct eye contact, my body's movement stopped.

...Trembling.

I can feel my body... trembling.

What... is this feeling...? Is this... fear? It's been a while since I last felt it..

Shaking my head to get rid of this feeling, I snapped out from it.

I need to get rid of her ice...!

BANG!

I punched my right hand. The ice shattered to pieces and fall off.

“.....” Staring at me, she remained silent.

...Slowly.

She reached out her arm.

As her snowflakes gathered, more spears are formed and it floated around her.

...Crap.

She added more spears... I`m sure there`s nearly a hundred of them.

“...Pierce.” As she whispers, her eyes narrowed.

Although the numbers increased quite a lot, ...but it`s still the same technique she used earlier.

And so, I responded back with the action I took earlier.

I grab the first spear—

ARGH...! PAIN...!!! IT`S SO FREAKING COLD!!!

...and blocked the other spears by spinning the one that I have on my hand.

Successfully defending and preventing myself— the victim from harm.

Her spears are like controllable bombs. It`s ready to explode at any time under her command.

What should I do now? Should I throw the spear towards her...?

As I was thinking that, I stepped away from her spear`s explosion range.

“...Burst. “ She whispers, putting her hand down.

Just right before the spear on my hand could explode, I threw it away with haste.

All the ice spears exploded once again with a dull explosion sound, creating even more ice crystals and snow.

No, this isn`t good for me at all.

I can`t attack her, because she`s too beautiful...

But yet, that makes her even more furious. Because she thinks I`m looking down on her.



1-3

This is bad, this is bad...!

As snowflakes gathered on that girl's right palm, an ice sword was forged. She then grabs it with her right hand and dashes towards me with a god-like speed.

Here she comes...! Why are you that obstinate to kill a fellow student that just transferred here today...!?

"...Dancing white lotus." She whispers, with her blade came soaring towards my stomach at a crazy speed.

Having no choice, I quickly took a step back and leaned my waist to avoid her blade.

But yet with her amazing dance-like footwork and movement, it backed and continue to let her pursue and attack me with a fast speed.

I continue to step backwards, avoiding her consecutive sword attacks.

As this continues, I realize something.

Her eyes... not even once it looked away from me. She's constantly observing and predicting my every move.

Not much is able to fight and observe at the same time. She trained hard.

Furthermore, she has such an elegant sword dancing style, flowing like a stream and dancing movements as elegant as a flower.

If her sword wasn't aiming at me, I'm sure I will stay at a corner and watch her dance all day.

Her sword arts was the type to be fatal, but she controlled it with precise accuracy, avoiding my fatal spots.

Of course, even though I understood it, I won't just stand there and get hit. Given bare-handed, the only way to defend against it was to stick as close as possible to limit her movement.

But, I can't.

Let me ask you a question and think about the answer carefully.

If you are guy that was single and don't have a crush, is it possible for you to stay close to a beautiful girl with a cute face that possesses a charm while emitting dreadful vibes?

The answer is a resounding no.

I would probably faint from her sharp, charming eyes then killed by her.

...What should I do now? The answer is very simple.

Turn away and run.

I instantly created a distance of 50m by jumping away.

“...I won’t let you.” That girl murmured.

Instead of pursuing me, she stood there pointing her hand at me. My surrounding temperature was dropping at a fast speed.

“...Ice Coffin.” She whispers.

Snowflakes quickly hurled and surrounded me, preventing me to escape.

Knowing what might possibly happen, I tighten my right fist.

Icicles shoots up from the ground and covered my body, keeping me locked in a large ice crystal.

Argh...! The cold and pain stimulus on my body is throbbing like crazy...!

“Hah!”

Reluctantly, with brute force, I broke free from her ice and quickly dash towards a clearer area and catch my breath.

Afterwards, I ran away from her at full throttle. Thankfully. She didn’t chase me.

But still... I think that I didn’t misheard. Before I ran, the words that she was whispering, ‘...Is it really you...?’

“Hah... hah... how scary...!”

Normally I wouldn’t feel tired at all from running a distance that was merely around a hundred meters. I found out that even my lungs were ‘iced’. Her snowflakes that I inhaled is making my lungs slightly frozen— making me hard to breathe.

That girl is holding back quite a lot. Holding a lunchbox and fought easily in both melee and long range... What a monster.

Her ice... is too abnormal. It spreads out like fire.

Phew... After the crazy event, I finally reached the Student Council President’s building.

Looking closely, the building looks surprisingly big.

I stopped outside the door of the building, adjusting my tie and tidying my sleeves.

I took a deep breathe. I-It’s not like that I’m nervous or anything, it’s because my lungs are cold.

It’s 8.30am. Just in time.

...Ceiling that was made of glass, decorations that was hanged on the wall, ornamental plants...

What reveals after the blurry glass door that opens automatically, was a lobby with an interior design that's similar to a six-star hotel.

Several classy chairs and tea tables are placed on the sides of the lobby, with a crystal lamp on top on each of them.

HOW LUXURIOUS! HOW MUCH MONEY DID THEY SPEND ON THIS!?

"This aroma..."

...I could smell the fragrance of red tea; it seems that someone made some.

I scan across the lobby that was decorated by ornamental plants—

...a girl that was sipping a cup of red tea, caught my eye.

Her long, beautiful sparkly and glittering blonde hair weaved around her shoulder and waist.

The presence of the black ribbon, enhances the beauty of her hair.

Because of her black silk gloves and stockings, plus her elegant movement when drinking the tea, she gives out an aura so much like a noble.

...Her uniform is black colour...? It's different from the white uniform that I and that girl wear.

By the way, don't you feel hot? It's summer and I'm very surprised that you still can wear that.

Knowing that someone has entered, she immediately placed her teacup and slowly stood up.

I stood still, watching her walking gracefully towards me.

Something doesn't feels right, her pace isn't slowing down at all...!

W-W-Wait stop! Too close...!

"Hey there special transfer student~ How's your time with that girl~?"

After giving me a sweet smile, she asked an absurd question that was out of my imagination.

"Eh?"

That girl...? Is she referring to her...?

To think that in my first day I already encountered two weird events in just one morning. What a weird question. It was too sudden, I didn't even think about it... Where did she observe from? And by the way, how does she know that I'm a special transfer student?

"No wonder that the academy's principal recommended you. He even forced the school to admit you. Having power sure is great huh~?"

I didn't even have a chance to response but yet she was already into something else. But, based on what she said, that means...

"Eh...? To have this information... You are the Student Council President!?"

"Yes I am~!" She said in a way as if she is bragging about this.

Then, she continued.

"I am seriously watching things happening between you two. I quite enjoy scenes like this~"

Please don't misunderstood... Are you into romantic comedies or something?

"...Please pretend that you see nothing." I wryly smiled.

"Alright I know. Now would you come with me please?"

She said perfunctorily, walking towards the lift and I have no choice but to follow her behind.

Seriously, her pace is fast. She didn't even gave me a chance to deny completely.

Along the way, she stopped speaking all of the sudden. I was expecting her to keep on with her blabbering.

As we waited inside the lift, none of us spoke. The atmosphere between us turns up to be tense and awkward.

Basically, awkwardness is a result of thoughts such as 'If I don't say something...' and 'If I don't try and get along with her...' gnawing at your mind.

It's the same as how someone sitting next to another person on a train wouldn't be thinking 'Crap! We're alone together! This is so awkward!'

It would be good if she was explaining the details about this academy or something. But she isn't.

Huh... what was her name anyways? I should ask h—

"Ah that was rude of me. My name was Persia Silverlight, nice to meet you."

When that thought came across my mind, she formally introduce her name with a generous smile.

"...and my name was Lucifer Nightwalker von Nightmare, it's a pleasure to meet you, Persia."

Her nervous expression finally relaxed after we formally greeted each other.

I guess the reason she's nervous is because she's a noble from the Silverlight family. Normally once normal people knew that she was a noble, they will act differently. But that doesn't apply to me, noble or not, I don't care at all. That's also the way she wants it.

"We are here~ Please come in~"

The student council room is located on the top floor of this building. Looking more carefully, it seemed all the rooms in this top floor were related to the student council in some way.

Using her school badge, Persia authenticated herself at the door, which slid open to reveal a vast and spacious room.

The floor of the entryway was covered in a black leather rug. A depiction of Imperial Knights Academy's school grounds was hung on the wall. Placed in front of the large window, with room to spare, was a heavy beech conference desk with matching chairs. Simply put, it looked for all the world like the boardroom of a large corporation.

...Her room was ridiculously large. Even if she was a Student Council President, it was still ridiculously huge for one person.

Persia sat down at the head of the table with a practiced ease.

"Please be seated."

I followed her instructions and sat down on one of the chairs. Oh, it's quite comfy.

"Lucifer Nightwalker von Nightmare. Age 16. Birthday July 7<sup>th</sup>. Geez, that's it?"

She opened a screen in front of her, containing my data.

My information was too little, it's making me feeling guilty for no reason.

"....."

Persia sat there, constantly messing her screen up and down around like she was searching for something else for five whole seconds.

She finally decided to give up. After closing her window and placing her hands together, she into looked into my eyes with a serious expression which totally doesn't suit her image compared to before. The atmosphere starts to turn serious.

"...Do you know why you were chosen to attend this academy?"

Asking me why, her eyes narrowed.

"Erm..." I advert my eyes.

I said nothing. It would be strange to say words like 'I'm strong' or 'I'm powerful' or even 'I'm invincible'... This will just make others feel like you are bragging, you know?

Seeing that I'm keeping my mouth shut, Persia continued.

"You see, our academy's rank have been dropping since the last three years. What we need right now was a partner for our school's strongest, the <Winter Princess>, Kuroyuki Shiroha."

"Eh?"

..... Kuroyuki Shiroha...? This name..... No way...!

I can feel my blood running cold. With cold sweat dripping vigorously from my body.

The principal highly recommended me and to even manipulate behind the scene, but such a make-up reason for me to enter this academy is quite unexpected. Furthermore, I didn't expect that the girl I met today is the strongest student in this academy.

I recall the small game of prey and predator that I have with her. And clearly I would have been the prey, running away from the predator. No matter where I hide I will die someday, eaten by her.

Hmm..... how pathetic I am.

"Oh? You know she's the girl earlier? It's such a nice scene~"

Persia is referring to the fighting incident that happened with her earlier.

"Are you joking?! It's totally one-sided and she's holding back!"

I wonder why, her ears twitched.

"I knew you were good. But I can't believe it to this extent. I guess your level is even higher than me~"

She looks quite satisfied, to even give a little praise to me. But what does she mean by that?

"Oh! That's right; I almost forgot to tell you something. Do you know anything about our school system?"

Clapping her hands together, Persia suddenly cuts in with a questioning gaze.

"No, not a clue."

"Now I'll start explaining from the class division~"

Seriously, don't just switch the topic...

"Our academy has two ranking systems in total. The first one is the class division ranking system, Splitting the students into four ranks of C, B, A, and S, the highest. The rank and class that every student is entering are determined by how well they did in the academy's entering paper exam and practical fight test."

So there aren't any interviewing?

"In the entering exams, the ranks of the paper exam were determined with scores. Score 0-40 were placed in Rank C, 41-60 was placed in Rank B, 61-80 was placed in Rank A, and 81-100 was placed in Rank S."

"I see."

Nodding my head, I'm thinking that there's no need in the examination. But zero...? There's no minimum requirements for entering the paper exams?

"But since you were highly recommended, you were considered a special student, so we placed you in Rank S for the entering exam paper test."

"I see."

I expected that as much, to even tell someone to kneel on his knees, the principal might do something as much.

"...And for the practical fight tests, we created a system inside the training room— and speaking of that, let's go, now."

...I see. That's pretty unorganised. I'm sure she forgotten about that.

Both of us make our exit and head towards the lift again. But this time, we rode the lift down towards the lowest floor. That is, the lower ground.

The lift opened, revealing a large and long hallway that seems to connect to a certain room.

"Oh right, our school focuses on both civil and martial paths. You'd best remember this."

Leading me along the path to the training room, Persia turned with a smile.

"Even if I don't remember this, it wouldn't be a problem."

I don't think I have any problems in both of them. In fact, I'm quite confident that I'm much capable than most of the students here.

"Oh my, how confident~"

In response, Persia's eyes widened in surprised and amazement, covering her mouth with her hand.

"Anyways, Persia are you a first year?"

"Yup~ you and I are the same age~ How are you able to tell~?"

"I saw your authenticated name listing 'First Year's Student Council President'. Does this mean there are two more Student Council Presidents for two other years?"

"That's correct. After all, the principal wanted to divide the workloads properly. So I'm the only one befitting for you~"

I can't laugh. Her joke seems too... serious.

It took some time for us to reach the training room, located on the end of the hallway.

Once again, using her school badge, Persia authenticated herself at the door. Revealing an even wider and spacious room that's practically made out of steels.

So this is a training room, the ceiling was vaulted, and the room was nearly as spacious as a gym.

At one end were innumerable hexagonal patterns placed side-by-side, while the opposing end were made of glass, revealing a flurry of busy workers within, likely students of the training division.

"Now then, please step inside to that room while I will be watching from there."

I do what as Persia said. And the moment I did it, the door slammed shut.

"Lucifer, can you hear me?"

From the intercom, Persia's voice can be heard behind the glass.

"Yeah."

"Now then, I'll explain about the practical fight test. It's simple, just defeat your incoming opponents projected by the system. It's a hologram and it was pretty realistic, just hit them with your hand and legs and it will be considered as one kill. But also, they can hit you, and the hologram that touches you will inflict pain to your pain nervous system. Until you say quit, or else it's going to continue until you were detected knock out."

After hearing her explanation, it gives me a feeling of an RPG killing monsters.

"What about my weapons?"

There's no way I'm going to fight barehanded... right?

"Here."

From my position, I can tell that a student pressing a button inside the control room. Something teleported to the centre of the room— where I am standing.

Huh? It's a pair of gloves. There's some wires and silicon coated on it.

Obviously, I need to wear it. It automatically adjusted itself and fits to my size.

But it feels quite strange to fight with gloves...

"These gloves is directly connected to the nervous system of your brain. It will form a simple weapon you think of. To activate it, just imagine what kind of weapon you want, the system will detect it through your nervous system, then it will form. But if it's unreasonable, it will come out something weird."

Wow. The technology here is pretty advanced.

I imagined a pistol, and it really does form a pistol. It even has weight and it have the feeling of holding the gun, it does feel pretty realistic. Just that the pistol I imagined looks pretty ugly... and it looks pretty weird too.

"Now? Are you ready?"



“Yeah.”

Not even feeling the least bit nervous, I answered her with enthusiasm.

“In three! Two! One! Start!”

“LEVEL ONE.” The systems informs.

An enemy appeared, with a sword on his right hand holding it like an amateur.

I pressed the trigger on the hologram pistol, with a loud sound ‘Bang!’ and a slight recoil, a bullet flew straight to the head on that hologram while later the system was displaying ‘Headshot!’

What the hell is this-- This suddenly feels like I was playing a shooting game not RPG. Killing 50 persons straight while it keeps on displaying headshots and kills that blocks the screen when I was using a sniper.

As this goes on, the enemy kept on coming, welding with different weapons, but only coming solo. All of them were shot immediately by my pistol, after 50 straight headshot kills, Level 2 was here. This is surprisingly easy.

In Level 2, the holograms came in a group. And they are still holding their weapons like an amateur.

I imagined for another pistol, it pops up on my left hand. I shoot them rapidly with the multi-pistols.

After with another 50 straight kills and headshots, Level 3 arrived. With only one hologram, but they were wielding the weapon like a little experienced fighter.

Continuing with two guns, I shoot the first bullet. The hologram dodged exaggeratedly, and I shoot his head with the other pistol.

It disappeared. And thus it comes with others one-by-one holding with different weapons. Some of them were shot with only one bullet, and others were shot with two.

And another 50 kills, Level 4.

Here comes in groups. I changed my shooting style. Rather than shooting slow and precisely, I shot fast and randomly.

50 kills. Level 5.

A solo again, this time was an experienced fighter.

They were able to dodge some bullets. But they still died nevertheless.

50 kills again. Level 6.

Groups. Again. They were able to get close to me this time. But I just hit and kicked them, they flew far away and died.

Level 7. With 50 kills.

A solo, wielding the weapon like a warrior.

They were able to dodge and block bullets. Nevertheless they still died under my feet.

Level 8. With 50 kills.....

A group. I changed the pistol on my right hand to a light doubled edge sword. Starting close combat.

First I shoot it with the pistol, after it blocked or dodged, then I slash it with my sword.

Level 9, after 50 kills.

Solo, basically this was like a trained soldier.

Were able to dodge, block and deflect bullets from the pistol. But blocking is useless from my slash.

Level 10. This was the max level. Of course, after 50 kills.

A group. Basically right now this was like a stimulation in having a war. Where you desperately trying to survive.

Normally the maximum person per group was ten. The maximum number is gradually increasing every time I kill a group. Feeling that bullets won't work anymore, I changed my weapon to dual swords.

After killing for a certain time, a group of fifty holograms came charging forth. It won't increase further

Now I guess it was a test of stamina and durability.

I didn't care. I just kept on slashing and killing, like a demon.

The Nightwalker arts, has a requirement. In order to acquire insane speed and strength, I need to train like hell under a large amount of weight till I'm able to use the specific muscles on my body, including the muscles that even a trained fighter can't even use. To make sure that my body can withstand this force, it must be trained when growing up. My brain must be able to take the strain of moving in high speed.

I guess I've killed too far many that I can count. I felt nothing but bothersome. And so, with another 50 holograms. I ended their lives with a technique.

"Dual Wielding Swords Arts – Dual Slashing Stream!"

I simply ran around the whole room and slash any hologram in sight. The speed so far that the Nightwalker arts that I can handle was a hit in a millisecond. And so it was possible to hit nearly a thousand people in just a second, if all of them aren't too far apart.

.....damn. This is so hellish boring. This was just like an endless killing game. You just kept on kill killing and more killing. What the hell, to max out the points?!

"Alright, I give up!"

Filled so much with boredom, I yelled to the system.

The incoming holograms disappeared immediately and the door opened.

"You aren't tired at all, aren't you? You sure gave out a wonderful expression out there~"

As I flawlessly exit the training room, I spotted Persia lying in wait to greet me. Rather than greeting me, she's actually smiling brightly but yet it looks like grinning. I have a bad feeling about this.

"Estimate mode please~!"

After Persia yelled out, the workers quickly enter some data into the system.

"Hmm...? What is estimate mode?"

"Well, actually there are a lot of cases where sometimes people that was not in their condition, they can't go all out during the test. The 'estimate' mode was a system created to calculate a more accurate value of kills during the test by calculating by your breathing rate, attack speed, kills per second, mental condition and your body condition. And by that, I'm quite impressed. You are just fooling around, aren't you. It's written all on your face~"

"Ahaha... You founded out." I tried to brush it off by laughing.

"So, what was the estimated kills?"

"T-The kills d-during the test is t-two thousand seven hundred and t-twenty kills, a-and the e-estimated kills is t-thirteen..."

The workers seems to be quite shocked, as if their tongue has been knotted together.

"13600 kills!"

"Oh? What does that mean?"

I asked. Whatever it is, I guess that is a high value.

"Hahaha!!!" Persia laughed suddenly, she surprised me through and through.

"I guess that you don't have any choice after all!"

What on earth do you mean by 'no choice'? I don't understand this at all...!

"Do you know anything about the practical battle rankings?"

"Obviously I don't."

"For Rank C it was 0-200 kills, B is 201-300 kills, A is 301-400 kills, and S is 401-1000 kills."

"Eh??? I wasn't placed in any of that??? So what am I?"

"The special class. With the strongest student in this academy. Having a test result of 2721 kills, and estimated 13605 kills. 5 more kills than you."

As she soon as she said that, I could suddenly feel my blood run cold.

"No way... Don't tell me it's..."

"Yes! You're right! It's the <Winter Princess> Kuroyuki Shiroha!"

She said this with a burst of laughter. Her face shows 'Hahahaha congratulations and good luck!'

With her laughing, I went into frozen state. It's because of her — Kuroyuki Shiroha.

"S-so who's in that class too?"

Feeling anxious, I'm hoping that there's at least someone in there to die with me.

"Oh~? It's you and her alone~"

I want to die. Someone please kill me twice.

"Eh~ It seems you are really scared of her~"

Persia's have an 'as expected' expression, I nodded with agreement upon her statement.

"Yeah, you should~"

But despite that, Persia didn't give me an ounce of consideration and wore a smile of indifference.

Why!? I thought you are going to comfort me?! You are making it worse!

"There's nothing that this academy can teach her, whether it is sports, studies, cooking, music, arts or even battling, she can do all of that perfectly. Now the teachers have nothing to teach her but to follow the courses same with other classes. Simply put, she was the most perfect girl in this academy. That's why you should be scared~"

That's scary. If a man with low standards have a girlfriend like her, I bet that he will be filled with guilt and kill himself for having such a perfect girlfriend that's too scarily perfect.

There's something else that caught my interest.

"Putting that aside... the numbers are odd."

"What do you mean?"

Persia grinned, as if she's interested in what I'm trying to say.

"Kuroyuki was far stronger than me. There's no way that the difference between me and her are five kills."

"Or maybe you aren't confident in yourself~?"

Persia gives me a feeling like she is lying, because her eyes is adverting away from mine.

Come to think of it, I'm bare-handed that time so I guess that I overestimated her power...?

Without putting other doubts, I decided to believe in myself.

"I see, I guess so."

"Now putting that aside, you are now placed into a same room with a beautiful girl. Shouldn't you be happy with it~?"

"Even if this is a joke—"

"Don't worry~ she's really nice though. She was very famous as soon as she enrolled into this academy. Everybody knew how beautiful she was. Well... but if you try to confess to her you'd end up frozen like those five guys you saw back then."

"Eh? Those five students back then? And why will I even confess to a girl I just met?!"

...Why in the world that five male students confess to her at the same time?!

"After hearing rumours of a mysterious beauty over and over again, those five guys grouped together and try to defeat her then confess to her after their victory~"

"The hell's wrong with them!? Aren't they too hasty?!"

"Actually to be blunt, you are the weird one for not confessing the moment you looked at her."

Huh? Does she had a charming ability or what?

"Don't worry, since 95% of the boys and 64% of the girls in this academy confess to her. You are the some of the remaining weird people for not confessing."

.....Wow. That number was way too intense.

No wonder she froze them.... Because of them I almost turned out to be a victim.

"Did you confessed to her?" Out of curiosity, I asked Persia.

"Are you an idiot~?" As she replied, she laughed at me.

In the end, does that mean yes or no?

1-4

It came. It came again. The feared situation.

No, wait calm down. There`s still a long way to go.

Persia is heading towards the special building. There`s definitely no way I`m getting out of this anytime soon. Not mentally for that either. As the sound of her heels click clacking on the floor.

I`ve a bad feeling about this. No, wait. It was bad indeed. If Persia was taking me to the special building then that means she`s taking me to the special class. That`s what `special` means.

“What`s this~? Don`t be nervous~”

As Persia is leading me along the path towards the special room, Persia turned with a smirk.

“As if! All I can feel is fear!”

“Pfft... Hahahaha!!!”

She`s being more and more annoying. Laughing that loudly. If her face wasn`t cute, I`m sure I would have hit her.

“Enough with that already!”

“Okay I will stop~”

Noticing that I`m glaring at her, she stopped by averting her eyes and continue walking.

“Come to think of it... is she the only special student in this academy?”

“She`s the first to break the record of the training system, and you are the second~”

Based on her statement, something seems off.

“Actually, what is a special student anyway? Even if the results are overwhelming, but why does it need to be separated from the Ranked S class?”

“About this, special student receives direct instructions from the principal to perform their given tasks. And in return, better facilities is provided to them.”

“That seems nice. Then what about being her partner...?”

“Nothing much though, only to participate the <Knights Tournament> with her. But since you are both of it, you helped me to clear two painful task at the same time~”

“No wonder you looked happy...! Wait... you looked so sure that she wouldn`t reject me...?”

“I guess the principal gave direct orders to her already...”

She`s not too sure with her words. I can only felt that she`s hiding something.

“Wait, that means I need to do the tasks given by the principal?!”

“More or less~”

Ugh... So troublesome. My peaceful school life...!

To make things worse, we already reached the special class. That`s way too fast, perhaps it was my brain mentally unprepared and I still can`t accept this despite given a long time.

But seriously, that`s not the issue here. What`s with this fancy door?

With a press on the doorbell of the screen next to the door, saying some polite words like ‘Sorry to intrude, but I`m coming in.’ the door opened automatically.

.....

What the...?

ISN`T THIS ROOM TOO LARGE TO BE A CLASSROOM!!?

This room is even larger than the training room, which is already incredibly large.

There are personal laptops which is the latest, a personal air conditioner, a fridge, an adjustable chair, etc. There was more than enough space, facilities, and equipment. It was easily enough for just two students to use. The fridges were filled with drinks and snacks. Air conditioner which can be adjusted to whatever temperature wanted.

Looking around, I noticed that the ceiling was made of glass. High-class paintings were hanged on the walls, and there were ornamental plants around the room. The interior design looked like a six-star hotel.

Apart from all of those, what was most obviously distinct from everything else in the room, was a single girl, reading a book. Under the light of the sun, she gave an illusion that was so much that it was like another scene from a painting.

The moment I saw it, both my mind and body froze again.

Even though it was the second time we met, but I`m still inadvertently fascinated by it again.

Realizing there were visitors, she placed a bookmark in her paperback book and looked up.

“.....Why is he here?”

After she gave me a quick once-over with a cold look in her eyes, she muttered in displeasure.

“From today onwards, this guy here will be your partner. I will not allow any disagreement, objection, protest, questions or retorts this time~!”

Persia seems to be quite enthusiastic about this matter. Analysing her words, it seems Kuroyuki gave even someone like her quite some headache.

“...No.”

I`m being rejected already?!

“Like I said, you can` t—” Persia paused for a while.

It was surprising that given the vocabulary that Persia said in such a short time, she`s able to differentiate all of them and speak out what she wanted. A clear rejection.

“Like I said, don` t reject your partner immediately every time after you took a glance.”

In response of Kuroyuki`s retorts, Persia puffed her cheeks a little and stares at Kuroyuki.

I`m surprised that she continued it like it never happened. Looks to me that I`m not her first introduced partner. And it seems that Kuroyuki rejected every partner that Persia introduced every time.

“.....Then...”

After Kuroyuki said this, she glared at me with an expression was that of bloodcurdling anger—

WHAT THE HELL IS THAT IT WAS SO SCARY!!!

This overwhelming pressure... why does Persia seems fine...? Is it being directed solely to me...?

“.....I`m astonish.” Seeming amazed, she broke her eye contact with me and looks at Persia with her usual cold stare.

“Alright then, it seems you come to take a like in him. Well I guess I will leave him in your hands~”

Wait, what?

“H-heh wait a minute! Didn` t she rejected me?”

I tried to ignore Kuroyuki`s expression and play dumb.

“No. She accepted you.”

.....but it was useless. She answered it clear and straight!

“Wait! I can` t be her partner!!!”

“Why?” Persia asked, with an innocent look.

Good question...

...I tried to think of a good reason. But she`s perfect and beautiful! But if I say that she was scary and stuff I will die.

Ah! I know, I will just say that I`m not suitable for her!



“...The moment you walk out from this door, you will die.”

I saw Kuroyuki chuckled and looked in my direction, but her eyes weren't laughing – they were scary.

...My escape route have been cut off completely.

“Well then, bye~”

With haste, Persia walks out calmly and even remember to close the door. Leaving me and her behind.

Alone.

1-5

Kuroyuki Shiroha was rumoured to be nice and beautiful.

I will definitely admit that she's overwhelming beautiful.

But she carries a scary aura. It's so dreadful that it could kill ten people.

Although I really wish to leave this room, but yet I can't since she's serious with the fact that she will kill me.

Honestly, I never thought that through this absurd turn of events, I could be acquainted with her. I'm sure if I boasted about it to my friends, they'd be jealous. Even though I don't have friends I could boast to.

I would be feeling a whole lot less stressed if they had just let left me by myself. Being in an isolated environment, as I usually am or even with my family, would make me feel more at ease. The sound of her pages flipping was so dreadfully slow that I could hear it flapping loudly.

.....Is this for real?

An incredible blanket of tension just came over the room. I had no complaints about the situation.

This is just so stressful. Even the air is so hard to breathe here...!

The air here seems to be colder and denser, as if I'm standing on top of a mountain. Is it because of her presence?

Hah... what should I do...? Should I go and talk to her...? I should have...

Wait, wait... don't be hasty.

If I carelessly jump in and talk to her, our relationship might get iffy even more than now.

In the end, this is tiring...

Little sis, Ruby... where are the both of you now? Your big brother/master is having a hard time here.

If it's my little sis and magical pet, what will they do in a situation like this...? Being locked with a beautiful yet scary girl in a six-star special room.

...Both of them would probably call me for help. How vexing. This isn't helping me at all.

Come to think of it, why did she rejected me in the first place later then accepted me after she shot a terrifying and horrifying glare?

"...Why did you accepted me afterwards?"

I inadvertently spoke out the thoughts inside my head.

Realizing that there's another presence in this room, she turns her head towards her right— my direction, then she glared at me as if to say 'I hate you, why are you even alive?' Like I said, her eyes were scary.

"...Sit."

But yet with an angel-like voice, she told me to sit on the adjustable chair beside her followed by a cold smile. The fact that even that kind of combination could look good on Kuroyuki was a mystery.

"No thanks."

Is it really okay to sit beside her? It's already suffocating already from this distance, not to mention a closer distance.

".....Sit."

Despite the trembling in my voice, Kuroyuki made no motion that she was bothered by it. She made it clear that I will sit beside her.

"Erm... No—"

"...Do I need to repeat myself?"

Her cold, soulless glare is so scary. The vibes she was giving off weren't light-hearted, but rather like that of a sharpened knife. So sharp that I wondered if my life would end if I lost.

Giving into the pressure, I began to run a cold sweat as I silently sat on the adjustable chair next to her right.

The moment that I sat down and look at her again, she started to talk.

"...The reason I choose you... it's because you didn't run away."

Huh... this is the first time Kuroyuki Shiroha shown me her smile. As she smiled, I learned whether or not she had dimples or a double tooth peeking out. In other words, she was really cute. That smile of hers was certainly foul play!

"What do you mean by that?" I asked.

Kuroyuki appeared slightly miffed. After which, she averted her eyes in displeasure and spoke.

"...Every partner that was introduced to me ran away after I stared at them."

Kuroyuki puffed her cheeks a little and looked away. She looks somewhat irritated as if she recalled some unpleasant memories.

Tch. Why didn't I run away too!? And you say that a 'stare'? That's basically an eye technique that was enough to kill.

"...Based on your strength... you are the second strongest I have seen so far." She murmured, turning her head.

Upon saying this, Kuroyuki gave a slight self-deprecating smile. Her smile seemed somehow sombre yet calm.

“Second...? If there was somebody stronger than me why didn’t you choose him?” I asked.

I couldn’t care about her expression, my only thought is running away.

If I can find this person, then maybe I can convince him to replace me—

“...Forget what I said.”

.....at least tell me where that person is...!!!

“...I’m astonished.”

For some reason, Kuroyuki had a distant look in her eyes and her gaze was directed away from me. Thanks to that I found myself thinking that the gentle curve of the outline of her chin to her neck was beautiful.

“Huh? For what?” As soon as I said that, Kuroyuki turned her head.

“...Wait.” Saying that, she glares at me, seriously.

...I find it difficult to understand her. I couldn’t tell what she’s thinking at all.

“...Are you a stalker?” She asked.

.....Huh.

THAT’S WHAT YOU WERE THINKING?!

“Why would I stalk you for!?” I protested.

“...because I’m too beautiful.”

Kuroyuki said it naturally without being particularly embarrassed nor prideful. Rather, she wore her usual, unchanging cold expression.

“Well... that may be so—“

I agreed that much. She was probably the most beautiful person I have ever met. But I can’t say that the situation between me and her in a room is lucky. Basically it’s pretty much that my life is at stake here.

“...So you are here to stalk me.”

She’s still continuing with that. I can’t blame her, since 95% of the boys in this academy confessed to her and she rejected all of them. Since she’s super popular, I guess there are more or less stalkers and perverts included.

“Hey wait a minute didn’t we just finished that already?”

“...Then you are here to confess. Die.”

Her eyes narrowed. Releasing an awful amount of killing intent.

Trying to remain calm from her overwhelming pressure, I retorted her.

“W-Why are you assuming that I’ve got a thing for you?!”

“...Nearly all the boys that approached to me confessed. Unless... you are—”

Kuroyuki nonchalantly cocked her head in puzzlement and made a confused face. It was cute...!

“Are you assuming that I’m gay...? How could you even make such a wild conclusion?!”

“...Even a married teacher confessed.” Kuroyuki said with a wearied expression.

Her eyes flashed, shooting daggers at me, with a scowl deadly enough to make a sound. Only a woman cursed by beauty was capable of an expression so alarmingly powerful that it would unwillingly draw you in and completely overwhelm you. That is to say, it was seriously scary.

“H-Hey, don’t just assume that I’m the same with them—”

“...Ice shot.”

Before I could even finish my sentence, Kuroyuki shoots an ice block towards me by snapping her fingers.

“Whoa!?” Reflexively, I knock away her ice block with my left hand.

“Why did you do that for?!” I complained.

“...You are going to confess, aren’t you...?” Her face looks dead serious.

“WHAT NONSENSE ARE YOU EVEN SPOUTING?!”

“...I see. You are here to harass me... you should die after all.”

Our surroundings turn colder in an instant.

“WHY CAN’T YOU JUST ACCEPT ME AS A CLASSMATE AND A PARTNER?!”

“...You don’t look like it.” She sighed while giving me a scornful look.

“Am I that untrustworthy?! Don’t judge a book by its cover!”

“...But you don’t even have contents. You aren’t even a book.” She murmured.

“THE HELL! IT’S JUST A FIGURE OF SPEECH...!”

“...Calm down. Your language is turning bad.”

“LIKE HELL I CAN!!!”

“.....I see. Really?” She shot me a horrifying glare.

Plus, after hearing her threatening words, I calmed down immediately.

Kuroyuki chuckled, as if she’s enjoying the one-sided conversation between us.

“...I can accept you as my partner.” She said.

“.....Finally.” I sighed out of relief, feeling some enlightenment after all of that.

“...and also as a classmate.” She continued.

“You should’ve said so earlier.”

“...I thought you wanted to leave?” She inclined her head with an innocent look. It’s cute.

So she knows what I’m thinking after all...? Then, I need to be honest here.

“Well uh... if you say so—”

“...I will kill you the moment you leave this room.”

Kuroyuki cuts in before I can finish, then shot me a terrible frosty expression.

“Then why do you ask me that for?!” I replied.

Hearing that, Kuroyuki took a deep breath in response.

“...because you are the first one to reject me...” She said in a strained voice.

She looks depressed, which I didn’t expect to see this other side of her.

“What are you even saying?”

“...I’m still not good enough...” She murmured with a shallow voice.

I’m pretty much surprised to see that gloomy look of hers that went further on.

Huh... Am I the bad person here? It’s totally her fault. But even so, I need to cheer her up.

“Of course not! It’s me who’s not fit to be your partner and instead, I should die!”

The choice of words that I used seems too self-deprecated. But yet she’s buying all of it.

“...I see... Want me to help...?”

Suddenly she returned to her usual self, with a glint on her eyes.

“Why are making such a scaring looking eyes as if it’s saying ‘have a taste of death’ for?”

"...you look pathetic." She replied.

It's all because of your fault.

"Even if I'm weak, I will definitely work harder and stand above everyone else!" I declared.

Kuroyuki closed her eyes as though she was remembering something. Did I stimulate her sour memories?

"Huh...? Why did you become quiet all off the sudden?"

"...Nothing." She replied.

After clearing her throat, she spoke.

"...Lucifer Nightwalker von Nightmare..."

Starting from the time from we first met till now, I'm sure that I haven't introduce my name even once to her. How did she know my name...?

"...From now on, you shall be my partner." She declared, once again.

"Finally, you accept me—"

"...I will kill you if you try to do anything funny." Kuroyuki set about readjusting her collar, and glared at me.

"You still partially rejected me!"

"...You pervert." Kuroyuki embraced her body as she took a defensive position.

"I'm not!" As to stop her from saying strange things, I decided to get to the point.

"Kuroyuki Shiroha. From today onwards, I will be counting on you."

I reached out my right hand, asking her to shake it as an agreement. But yet, Kuroyuki is staring at my hand, as if there's something else in her mind.

"...are you trying to feel pleasure from my hand?"

"JUST HOW MUCH OF A PERVERT YOU THINK I AM?!"

"...Some of them even suffered from extreme blood loss due to nosebleed after they looked at me."

But I'm not in the same group as those perverts at all!

"Can't you just shake it already?"

"...Fine." Slightly puffing her cheeks with an unwillingly look, she shakes my hand.

"C-C-Cold...!"

Even though her hand is soft, but yet it's so freakishly cold. That coldness was so overwhelming that my hand went frozen with just a touch.

"...Sorry... I can't control my powers properly..."

I can totally tell that Kuroyuki is apologizing superficially, because her eyes are laughing.

"Then you should have said so!" I grumbled, smashing the ice with my other hand.

"...It's embarrassing." She said, with an expressionless look.

"Why you are getting embarrassed all of the sudden?! Your face doesn't even look like it!"

"...it's embarrassing to show my embarrassed face." She continued, with an expressionless look.

Getting annoyed, I can even feel the corner of my mouth twitched upwards.

"I can't take this anymore! I'm out!"

"...you dare?" She shot me a frosty glare.

"I'm sorry please forgive me." I quickly apologized.

The overwhelming suppression from Kuroyuki in our conversation makes me stressed out. I need to distract before she speaks again...!

I quickly took a glance around on anything that I'm able to see.

I saw a stand, with a finished painting that was placed on it. Trying to get a closer look, I stood up and walk closer towards it.

Kuroyuki is staring at me as I walk towards the painting.

I can feel... the grass... the pink tree, rustling from the wind that blows. The clouds hanging on the air is flowing slowly. As if... the painting itself is alive.

"You drew this?" Amazed, I asked Kuroyuki as I continue to stare at the painting.

"...Un." She nods without any prideful look.

...You really lived up to your name. This... truly is a masterpiece.

"You are amazing."

"...Un." She nods again.

"How long have you practiced for this?"

Unable to believe to such an accomplishment, the thoughts in my head inadvertently blurted out.

"...Five months."



What?! Is she a super genius!? Even a genius need at least a year to achieve this.

"You are scary."

"...Un."

Hmm...? Did she agreed just now?

"Not even a genius can do this. What's driving you so far to this extend to even draw a simple art this perfectly?" I asked.

"...What makes you say that?" She said in a monotone voice, as if it's trying to say 'is it really that strange?'

"I mean... Unless you really considered this as your future but... obviously you aren't. This piece of art wasn't just merely considered as your future but something even more so...?"

Kuroyuki's ear twitched. Then, she heaved with a sigh, as if to cover up her irritation.

"...I underestimated you. With just a simple piece of art and yet you were able to understand so many..."

"Just how trashy do you think I am?!" I protested, with my head facing her.

"...I want to dump you into a fire pit..."

"Wait, I don't even get a chance to stay in a dustbin?!"

In response to my remark, Kuroyuki gently put a hand on her temple as though she had a headache, and hung her head low.

"...you really considered yourself as trash..." She muttered.

"Wait! Forget what I said...!"

"...then, introduce yourself." She said with a smile.

"Huh? All of the sudden..."

"...Just do it."

Since I don't feel like standing, I walk towards the chair beside her, and sat down.

"Umm... okay. My name is Lucifer Nightwalker von Nightmare. My birthday falls in July 7<sup>th</sup>."

Kuroyuki that was staring at me, I saw her eyes widened.

"Did I say something wrong?"

"...No. Please continue." She replied.

“Well, my hobbies are—“

“...at least as capable as me...?”

“Huh? No. I enjoy naps.”

To be honest, I'm not her at all. I don't think that I have any capabilities like her.

“...I see. You are trash...” She uttered.

“Why are you labelling me ‘trash’ all of the sudden?!”

Kuroyuki popped a vein upon my question.

“...Fools who do nothing but laying around shall enjoy their eternal slumber.” Her eyes are serious.

“I'm sorry...! I'm just joking!”

“...I know, 30% of what I said just now was a joke.” She smiled like a sunshine, with her eyes closed.

Shit. She's more than half serious.

I don't really have any ‘hobbies’, but if I said that I don't have one then perhaps I will die. And thus, the best possible solution for this is to choose something that I do frequently.

“Fighting.....?”

“...want to test it out?”

Huh... This turns out to be even worse than I expected. I have regrets and remorse in what I have said.

“I'm sorry. This is also a joke. Just pretend that you didn't hear anything.”

“...you are worse than trash after all.”

Is this a joke too? Why Kuroyuki's eyes are giving me such a scornful look?

“Alright, I will admit! You are just too strong! I can't win against you!”

“...I will hold back.”

After she said so with a smile, she decided to let me be as she silently opens her book and continue where she left.

1-6

Kuroyuki Shiroha. (黒雪 白羽)

Age: 16

Race: Human

Birthday: 12<sup>th</sup> December

Class: First Year Special Class

Rank: 1<sup>st</sup>

Marriage status: Single

Hobby: Reading, cooking

Favourite things: Unknown

Battle history: 103 wins. Remains undefeated.

Personal information:

The best student of the Imperial Knights Academy.

A super perfectionist and a super genius. She`s a total gifted. Excellent in every possible things, her talent had a limitless boundary.

Teacher`s comment: Can she replace me instead?

Fans club: 2237 members.

Fans comment:

Anonymous #1 – She`s so beautiful...!

Anonymous #2 – She`s like an angel...!

.....

Anonymous #651 – I want her to be my wife!

Anonymous #652 – She`s mine!

Anonymous #653 – Shut up! She`s mine!

Anonymous #654 – No! I`m the only one suitable for her!

.....

.....

.....

Anonymous #73284 – There`s a new guy transferring here today, it seems that he`s going into the same class with my wife!

Anonymous #73285 – What!? Who is he!? I can`t let him steal away my wife!

Anonymous #73286 – NOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO!!! KILL HIM!!!!!!!

Anonymous #73287 – AGREE! LET`S KILL HIM!

.....

.....What did I just read...? Are they talking about me!?

Huh... no wonder the principal made this place to a restricted area. Who are those anonymous anyways? They sure knows how to hide their names to prevent themselves to be hunted right?

It's scary in how they call her their wife. It's giving me chills as I read across those lines. Aren't they even ashamed of themselves for being selfish?

I involuntarily felt some sympathy towards her. You sure have it hard don't you, Kuroyuki?

"...What is it...?"

Her sixth sense was incredible. She murmured softly all of the sudden while clamping her book shut.

"...nothing at all." I murmured retreating into myself after being shot by the terribly frosty expression she gave me.

"...I see... Ice shot."

Without any extra effort she shoots me with her ice. Getting used to it already, I slap away the ice block.

"Why did you do that for?" I protested.

Perhaps she's thinking that I'm thinking something bad of her. I'm not them, okay?

"...pervert." She said with an expressionless look, not even blushing the slightest.

She's not being honest, in many ways. No matter how you look at me, I'm definitely an exceptional!

"Seriously, can't you just stop thinking about me that way?" I asked.

".....Will try." She gives a little nod in response.

"That's great."

As I thought that both of us have a mutual understanding between each other—

"...stalker." —that ear piercing word penetrates through my heart.

"Isn't that just the same as a pervert?!" I protested against her unreasonable label.

"...stalker is much worse."

My reputation right now is labelled as a 'stalker'.

"Then that means I'm even worse than a pervert?!"

"...Un." She nods her head innocently.

"Can I punch you?" If she weren't beautiful and cute and so on, I will definitely hit her with a chair.

“...you want to die?” Her eyes are so scary.

.....The atmosphere turned dreadfully cold suddenly.

Something pops out in my mind.

“Hey, Kuroyuki. Since I already introduced myself, don't you think it's your turn now?”

I wonder whether there's still something much more other than her fan page and personal data.

“...you will stalk me after that.” She embraced her body.

“YOU ARE STILL GOING WITH THAT?!”

I could feel my face twitch in anticipation of her response. It soon appeared that Kuroyuki's expression became despondent as she reflected herself.

“...I'm sorry. I will introduce myself.”

Finally, after all of those pointless conversations.

“...My name is Kuroyuki Shiroha. Nice to meet you.”

...and silence descended after those few words.

“That's it?!”

“...what else should I have said?”

She looks at me in a way, like saying ‘why should even introduce myself at the first place?’

“Can't I know something more as a ‘partner’?”

“...I have a partner named Lu—”

“Can you say something that I don't know about you?”

I knew that she is going to say my name, so I stopped her before she could even finish what that she was about to tell me something I already know.

“.....” Kuroyuki rubbed her chin thoughtfully for a moment.

“.....Is there something that you don't know about me?” She said.

Come to think of it, as just what I look through before... I actually know a little too much about her. It's an introduction, so important stuffs like ‘what are your three sizes?’, can't be listed as introduction. It's actually sensitive for her and she will treat me as a stalker or even more so.

Another thought came to my mind suddenly.

“What's driving you this far to this extend?”

It was the question before. Because of her I ended up forgetting about it.

"...What do you mean?" She tilted her head slightly and blinked her eyes a few times.

"The current you."

".....am I no good...?"

What makes you say that? If you dare to say you are not the most perfect girl in this academy than I guess all the girls in this academy is ready to commit suicide.

"Ah, sorry. I mean why you are perfect and so on."

Kuroyuki was fidgeting her fingers and had a slight blush in her face. Suddenly that icy-cold personality of hers went all girlish. It makes me wanting to confess to her and get killed.

"...a promise." She said, with a sweet voice.

Shockingly, she's willing to tell me. A guy, on top of that it's my first day.

"A promise...?"

I'm curious about on what sort of promise that's so powerful enough to create such a scary her.

"...I can marry him if I have something better than him."

Huh... it's one of those classic promise between children that you see in the movies. And based on that it's surely her childhood friend. Damn, you lucky bastard. That also means I don't have the chance...

Perhaps some might say that it's not too late yet. But it already is, since she's able to keep the promise for a long time. Her childhood friend might be some sort of person that's likely even better than her, because even having a perfect score in nearly everything, she still thinks it isn't enough.

"H-how long has it been...?"

I'm really amazed. She's doing her best I'm sure. If that childhood friend of hers was just fooling around with that promise, I will kill him.

"...8 years."

Eight years? In just eight years?! In such a short time... How can she even manage to study and stuff?!

"Then where is he?" I asked.

"...I don't know..." She said, while she went all gloomy.

Where the hell is he anyways? Toying with such a cute girl's heart.

"...I will wait for him... no matter how long it takes." She whispers in a soft voice.

I felt guilty all of the sudden. She`s actually even purer than I thought she was.

“Do you... want me to help you to search for him...?”

“...You will...? Thank you...”

Her smile is so pure, that my soul have a feeling that it was sucked out by her.

At the same time, no matter how cute she was, that pure smile that she made will make you feel with lots of guilt, that you don`t actually dare to confess to her anymore.

Huh... It`s the school`s bell ringing, clearly saying the class for today has ended.

...without a teacher.

.....

.....

.....

Where the hell are they...?

1-7

Sunset.

Outside the special building.

A beautiful scenery of the golden grass field lit by the sunlight.

"...I, Kuroyuki Shiroha hereby challenged you, Lucifer Nightwalker von Nightmare, to a duel."

...Damn it.

Even though I don't want to make such a huge ruckus on the first day but...

What the hell is with this crowd?!!! At least 80% of the students here are Kuroyuki's fans, but Kuroyuki herself seems to be the only one that doesn't know about her club.

No wait that doesn't matter, right now my opponent standing right in front of me is the strongest in this academy. No matter what aspect I'm faced against, I will definitely lose for sure.

"Hey, what's going on?"

"The <Winter Princess> is having a duel!"

"Seriously!? Isn't she Ranked No.1?!"

"Eh? Who is the opponent here? What class is he in anyways?"

"I don't know. I haven't seen his face before... How about the Ranking list?"

"I'm looking now...But, he doesn't appear in the Ranking list."

"He's not even in the list? Well he's a courageous challenger."

"How long will he last? Even if the <Ice Princess> is going easy on him, I guess he won't be able to last long."

"Perhaps.....one minute?"

"15 seconds."

Wait, what? I'm only not in the Ranking list, check my class rank, at least!

"Wait, I'm checking his class now..."

"Eh? He's not in any of the classes."

"Wait, are you sure you checked all of the class?"

"Yes I did, but no matter how you look at it, it's impossible for a guy like him to be in 'that' class right?"



Suddenly I`m already in the verge of tears. I`m ready to hit that bastard.

"I`ll take a look here."

"Found it. Let`s see..... Lucifer Nightwalker von Nightmare....."

"...Impossible!!!"

".....No way!"

With synchronisation, they shouted.

"From the special class!!!!!!?????"

Seriously, these people just can`t accept reality.

"Then, this guy..... he was the special student that just transferred today!?"

The news sure spread fast around this academy. Because of that fan club.

"Ugh... special indeed." Is he crying? Does this mean he`s jealous about me?

"Wait right there, I`m going to write down the data`s from those two, especially the new guy—"

"...all of you done yet?" Kuroyuki interjected calmly, having waited patiently for quite some time.

It was amazing how just the sound of her voice made everyone shut up and pay attention to her. Her transparently cold voice was extremely quiet and subdued. And yet the message got across, loud and clear. It was like listening to the sound of fresh snow piling on the ground.

Or perhaps it would be more accurate to say that — rather than merely shutting up — they were in an awe of her. Everyone opened their eyes wide and stand rooted to their spots. As they were spell bounded for a moment by Kuroyuki.

"...Accept the duel already."

Kuroyuki have been waiting for some time during the commotion, she`s pretty annoyed by them.

"O-On a second thought...I guess that we should just call it a d—"

Her eyes suddenly narrowed. The temperature of the grass field had dropped at least ten degrees through Kuroyuki`s frosty silence. Under that harsh pressure, I began to run a cold sweat as I nodded quietly.

"I—"

"You`re not an <Elemental User> aren`t you? What weapon you use?"

As I was going to accept this one-sided duel, a guy with a white-silver hair that carries a sword on his waist interrupted.

He doesn't seem like a bad guy but I can guess that he's more or less an idiot. Can't you see that the <Winter Princess> is getting annoyed?

"Oh? The <Sword Saint> is here."

Several students noticed him. It seems this guy is good enough to obtain a nickname.

"...a sword is fine." Seeing that he's holding a sword, I replied such an answer.

"All right then, use mine."

"A-are you sure? This sword looks quite expensive and I think I might break it."

"Use it. I'm here to steal sword techniques anyways." He smirks.

"Huh?"

The <Sword Saint> guy handed his expensive looking sword to me, saying strange words that I don't understand.

I pulled the sword out from the sheath. It was a single edge sword that shines with a silver light.

"Just visualize the type of sword you needed in your mind."

The sword guy (pardon my rudeness) roughly guides me how to use this.

"Huh? Really?"

The edge of the sword changed to a thin double edge sword. It was similar to the hologram weapon. But yet it is real, such amazing technology.

"This sword, is nice."

Before I can even turn my head back and accept the duel— a spear graze across my head with a cold, strong wind.

Her eyes are scary. I need accept her duel quickly before getting killed.

"...I, Lucifer Nightwalker von Nightmare, accept the duel of Kuroyuki Shiroha."

As proof of acceptance, the sleeves and collar ends of the uniform shone red.

Huh... so this will be my first duel in this academy. Persia did mention about being her partner, is it for the <Knight's Tournament>?

The <Knight's Tournament> was an entertainment that battles between nations. Each and every nation throughout the world must participate. As such, during this battle was held, every country must obey the rules, that is, war is prohibited during this event was held.

The Central Imperium City, which was an island located at the centre of many kingdoms, held this tournament once a year. This event can be only participated by only students age 16-18 and at least in a pair. The students around the whole world held their weapons in an extreme competition for supremacy.

With the agreement of the Imperial Knight's Memorandum of Understanding. The students that was said to knock out the opponent first wins. Although cruelty was prohibited, but if there was purposes of weakening combat efficiency, attacks to any other places were permitted. And since weapons will be used, naturally there would be injured people.

Nonetheless, if a student is able to win through battles, they will inherit the title of the <Imperial Knights>. As such, it will be acknowledge greatly by the army of their respective nation and countless desires will be fulfilled.

The opportunity for them to fight was not only in the <Knight's Tournament>. If hot-blooded young men or even ice cold young ladies that was confident in their ability gathered in the same place, quite few troubles would be expected to occur. In such cases, private wars in conformity with rules were permitted in Imperial Central City. Of course, other places too but the largest region was the Imperial Central City.

That was the duel.

Through victory or defeat was decided by knocking out the opponent as well as in the <Knight's Tournament>, the uniforms contained the data processing functions within it, it also performed the duel application decision, the combat data transfer, and so on to the host computer.

Especially in a duel between students belonging to the same academy, given that the rank would change depending on the issue, that means victory or defeat, there was a meaning more than just a private battle.

...Kuroyuki fought successfully through many duels and had obtained the highest ranked. If one would have rejected her duel, as a special student, she has a forced duel system. The forced duel system can't be ceased by even surrendering. Only she or her opponent is knocked out then the duel will be over.

Kuroyuki herself was a highly skilled <Ice Elemental User> as well as a professional martial arts fighter. Not to mention other things as well since she was perfect. But there's one thing that she doesn't have, a partner as skilled as her. As long as she had a partner, I believed that she'd be able to obtain First place in the <Knight's Tournament>.

Now to test whether the special student that was transferred today— me, is suitable to be her partner, she herself will test the boundaries of my power.

“...Pierce, freeze and burst.”

The ice spears that hit the ground burst and disappeared along with a dull explosion sound.

“Argh!”

Taking myself in a defensive position, I deflect her endless spears with the sword. Each and every time the spears explodes, more and more snow piled up.

“...Don't hold back.”

As Kuroyuki said so, with a lift of her fingers, a large pile of snow from the ground hurled towards me.

“Whoa!!?”

Quickly running away from my position, her snow and spears pursues me. I have no choice but to scatter her snow and spears away continuously with my sword blow.

“...Freeze.”

I'm already busy dealing with her spears, but yet Kuroyuki show me no mercy by freezing the area below my feet.

“W-Wah!!!”

I managed to escape by jumping away.

“...Not bad.”

She gave me a little praise. Nevertheless she still fires her ice spears continuously the whole time when she is setting traps.

If I don't get close to her enough, this will keep up till I will actually get stabbed.

After a change to dual wielding style with the sheath and sword, I charge forth towards Kuroyuki as I continue to deflect her spears.

“Dual Wielding Sword Skill – Wild Swing!”

Taking less than a second, I swing both arms with haste. My attacks are pretty heavy, I'm sure she's unable to—

CLANG!!!

.....block?

In that short moment, Kuroyuki forged an ice sword to block my attack that was aiming for her stomach.

In return of the strong hit, a large shockwave is created by the clashing of our weapons.

“Ahhh!”

“Whoa!”

Nearly all the students were sent flying with the shock. Except for me, Kuroyuki and that sword guy.

“...Your strength was also... on a different league too...” Kuroyuki murmured with a grin.

That smile was like a lone warrior that founded his opponent after many years.

“...Mirage.”

...She disappeared. There`s nothing but white feathers floating around my surroundings. Is this really a mirage...?

“Single Sword Skill– Full Swing!”

I swing the sword in a simple horizontal circular swing, I blew away the feathers with the sword blow.

“Huh?”

After the feather disappears, I saw countless spears circulating me.

“...A thousand strike.”

With Kuroyuki standing around 10m away from me, she control her spears to stab me.

The spears incessantly attacks me from all directions...! Now I guess I should move...?

I can`t move!? She froze my legs!?

“W-wa-wah...!”

CLANK! CLANK! CLANK! CLANK! CLANK...

I draw out an insane speed to guard myself with her 360 degrees spear attacks on a fixed position.

“Ow! Ow? Ow!?”

As expected, it`s too much. I can`t guard all of them at the same time. It hurts when it was rebounded away by my tough body.

Even a momentum of a rocket can`t penetrate through my tough body. Given a normal person, he`d be dead by now.

But yet, Kuroyuki didn`t show any sign of panicking after on what she have saw. She clenched her fist as she calmly look at me.

Feeling that she`s way too calm, I quickly realize that the main thing she wanted isn`t her spears to pierce through me. But rather— an explosion!

Countless ice crystals, ice blocks and snow spreads widely as the spears exploded under Kuroyuki`s command.

Luckily I find enough time for me to escape from that explosion.

“.....impossible...!” The sword guy seems pretty surprised when he saw this.

Anyone would have said that after witnessing what have happened in front of their eyes. But Kuroyuki seems to be quite less shocked with all of that that happened.

“...Thousand repeating blade.” Kuroyuki murmured, rush to me with an insane speed then stabs me with her sword repeatedly.

“Tch.”

I warded off her repeating blow over and over. Finally found a chance, I take a quick step backwards to open up some space.

“Dual Wielding Sword Skill– Full Double Swing!”

I forcefully swing my arm with a first horizontal circular swing upon that pressure that Kuroyuki gave.

But Kuroyuki is quick to react from my counter attack. She moved her body backwards and dodged the first swing. I quickly move slightly forward and unleash my second swing— but she parried my attack to another side.

Because of my swing that is too heavy, my body went unbalanced afterwards.

“.....”

Kuroyuki grabs this chance very well, her sword came piercing straight right at my abdomen without the slightest hesitation...!

In terms of speed, I'm not going to lose to her...!

CLANG!

I managed to parry that attack...!

“...White Flash.”

“Eh?”

In an instant, Kuroyuki disappeared and moved behind my back. ...This must be a lagged attack!

I know that her sword has a trajectory that aims on my chest. Sensing there is no time, I quickly brush off her slice with my fastest attack.

“One Handed Sword Skill – Millisecond Strike!”

Our attacks clashes strongly. Even I am having a hard time maintaining my footing.

The shockwave this time was so strong, even the sword guy who is still watching was finally sent flying. I noticed that the others gave up on watching already...

“WHOA!!?”

CLANK!

I parried Kuroyuki's sword with the sheath by reflex. Damn it don't just throw the sword straight to my face...!

Kuroyuki changed her weapon to a spear. Her technique with the spear was rather special, rather than wielding it and lance forth, she threw the spear directly towards my face.

...Wait, isn't that the same as before?

"Tch...!"

I warded off her second attack upwards with my sword—

"ACK!!!???"

Her sharp kick came immediately after she threw the spear right at my face. Even though I blocked her kick with the sheath, that attack made a very sharp and cold pain on my stomach.

"Ugh..."

".....you are still conscious..." She looks amazed.

With perfect timing, she grabbed back the dropping spear that I parried upward, and points it around my throat.

"...Surrender?"

She wore an expression of that can only be used when one has confidence in victory.

Perhaps she might already think that the stage is in order. But... in life, there is always something unexpected. And who knows what will happen in the end?

## Chapter 2: The second person, Lucifer Nightmare

In life, many unexpected things tend to happen. No matter how much you try to predict and prevent such situations to happen, it's futile. Because it's unexpected.

So... as things already happened as they are, how are you able to face it?

But first, what do you mean by 'unexpected things'?

Is it good, or bad?

The answer is both.

If it's good, obviously you don't need to do anything but to go with the flow.

What about bad things that happened? How are you able to make things right, or rather solve it?

The answer is very simple.....

.....

.....

.....I don't know.

What is it? Did you expect me to know the answer? Pretty unexpected, right?

Well, if you expect me to know the answer, then— you are wrong.

If you already expect that I have no idea— you are only half correct.

If you expect both of it, then— congratulations. You got the answer— that is, to expect the unexpected.

But yet, how many in this world can do that...?

"Hey, Kuroyuki."

As I called out to Kuroyuki, she looks at me dumbfounded. Because I'm not showing any intention to surrender.

"...what...?" She asked.

"Maybe he will surrender."

".....What do you mean...?" Slightly inclining her head, I can clearly tell that her face is showing full of questions.

"This."

...coming.



...the pain of my every night is coming.

Nineteen black magic circles appeared, circulating around me. As soon as it appeared, high speed daggers flew out from it, stabbing my body one after another in a point blank range.

“ARGH...!” I held my breath.

Pain.

All that I can feel... is my body being drowned in pain.

As if, each and every cell inside my body... is throbbing in pain.

Not even... the slightest part of my body is spared.

Even though I been through this every day, but yet I still can't endure such a pain that's even worse than getting my body torn apart.

After the daggers, the nineteen magic circles disappeared. A large black magic circle appeared with a large black magic sword flew out, stabbing through my chest and sending my body flying backwards.

“AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

Enduring the throbbing pain on each and every pain nervous system I have inside my entire body, my mind feels like breaking. There's no choice for me but to endure the pain with all my might.

...The pain is too unbearable, my body is burning— it's so hot that makes my blood that felt like it's boiling.

.....

The magic black daggers and sword vanished in thin air.

The half-moon and stars showed up. The stars glittering in the dark sky showing that its night time already.

I'm sure no one will care about that. Right now, the only thing that catches the most attention— is what that happened to me.

“.....the 'Twenty Seals'...!” Kuroyuki eyes widen in surprise.

“You really do know about it...”

I'm not surprised she knows about the seal. After all, she's a really smart and beautiful girl.

“That means you are the first year's ex-Student Council President...?” I asked.

The mysterious message did mention about a key to unlock my seal during my flight on the helicopter. That key is with the first year's ex-Student Council President.

I started to think that she's the first year's ex-Student Council President when the moment she spoke my name clearly. Because among all of the first years... all I can think is her.

"...you didn't know?" She replied, clearly with an innocent look.

"...This is my first day." Yeah, obviously. If I aren't smart and so on, I couldn't have guessed it sooner.

"...you are stupid." She gave me a scornful look.

"I don't to hear that from you." I retorted, gritting my teeth.

"...you want to die...?" She shot me a glare.

"Try it if you can." But it won't work on me.

Upon hearing my words, Kuroyuki did as what I say so out of irritation. As soon she points at me with her fingers, many spears circulated me then shoots at me.

Look closely towards every incoming spears, their direction, trajectory and speed thus making a calm and accurate evasion...

"There...!"

Before the spears hit, I dodged most of them by breaking a way out from the weakest point.

".....!" Kuroyuki has a mixture of surprise and confusion.

She launches a spear towards my left shoulder. With a slight bend on my left shoulder, I dodged it completely.

Kuroyuki quickly forge a sword and charge towards me at a fast speed. She knew that long range attacks won't work anymore when she saw my flexible movements.

"...Dancing dandelion."

Starting from my neck she unleashes her fast sword stabbing technique. I took a step back to dodge the fatal attack on the neck and a few others, then used a dagger wielding technique on the sheath in my left hand to divert the others.

"...you are— different." She murmured, as I dodged the final sword stab by skidding backwards.

Kuroyuki's sixth sense is amazing, she knew that something was wrong. The opponent she's facing now has a huge change in personality and fighting style.

But even so, she made no motion that she was bothered by it. Forging a spear on her right hand, she then grabs it. Using a spear and sword combination which is quite rare to be seen.

After she took two steps forward, the sword on her left came soaring towards my abdomen, swinging outwards.

I dodged by skipping it to the left side. Kuroyuki followed with a quick pierce of her sword, aiming for my chest. I dodged it again by stepping back.

Kuroyuki then made a rightward spin, turning her spear and thrust forth towards my stomach.

This seems... hard to dodge.

The length of her spear is around two metres long. If I need to avoid it, it means I need to dodge it sideways.

If I move to her left, she will stab me with her sword. If it's on her right, she will follow up with a turning right kick on me and add on her combo moves. Both of them aren't an option.

If I don't have any options, what about stepping back? No... the spear will definitely hit me.

What about jumping back further? She would probably extend her spear to stab me.

How about deflect it with the sheath? No... it's the same as dodging sideways as she will stab me with the sword.

So there are no options left— perhaps that's what Kuroyuki is thinking.

Is it really so that I don't have any choices left?

Of course not. The world is always... full of choices that the eyes can't see. As long as you can realize it, you can even take this world into your own hands.

I quickly crouch down to avoid her spear, and give a left spinning kick on her legs— CRACK!

Ow! It hurts...!

Surprisingly, her beautiful legs are very hard. But it doesn't seem like my bone is cracking.

I quickly added another spinning kick with my other leg.

BAM!

Kuroyuki went unbalanced in mid-air. Although I can clearly tell that she know she's going to be stabbed, but not even an ounce of fear is leaked...? What a scary woman.

I threw the sheath upwards. I breathe deeply, then wield the sword using the two-handed style.

“First Dimensional Sword Skill – Silent Blade.”

Taking a high speed dash, I sliced the first dimension on her stomach.

Her body looks like it's splitting to half. But when the line disappeared, everything returned to normal. A strong shockwave burst solely towards her direction and sent her flying backwards.

With perfect timing, I caught back the sheath that I threw upwards, then sheath the sword. It looks pretty cool this way.

Comparing the fights with those two little girls, this is nothing.

As expected, the counter type arts is more effective against opponents like Kuroyuki.

Unlike the Nightwalker Arts, which attacks randomly with insane strength and speed. By reading the opponents attacking techniques through dodging, deflecting, blocking, and observing. Thus, a monster-like evasive ability is required.

Once the opponent's fighting style was read clearly, there's no way to lose. Unless, the opponent's style is able to change frequently.

Hmm...? It feels cold suddenly.

I walked three step sideways, moving away from the icicles that shoots up from the ground afterwards.

"I thought you know that long range attacks won't work anymore." I sighed.

"...Just testing something." She replied.

Huh... I knew that she would be fine, but... there's not even a scratch on her...? How scary.

Kuroyuki took a small step forward, taking a spear— she vanished!?

So fast...!

For four times, leaving an after image every time she skipped in a dancing style, she appeared behind my back, thrusting her spear for my neck.

"...Frozen Spear Strike."

I move my body diagonally right and dodge her spear.

A cold gust of air from her spear violently bursts and shoots in a straight line, leaving icicles behind. It hits and freezes a tree to ice, then the tree crumbles and shatters.

...Luckily I dodged that—

"...Burst."

Eh?

Her spear head (which was still next to me) exploded.

"Phew..." I heaved with a sigh of enlightenment.

Luckily I anticipated that her spear would have explode. I jumped away from her range. Even though the explosion isn't that strong, it's still enough to hurt me, but yet Kuroyuki's completely fine from her own explosion.

Forging another spear, she approaches to me with two skips with her footwork.

“...Dancing dandelion.”

Spinning her spear, she gracefully swings it towards my abdomen. I diverted it with the sheath.

...Why is she using the same technique over and over?

Grabbing her spear two-handed, she thrust her spear many times like lightning.

I bend my waist flexibly to avoid her attacks.

“Silent Step.”

Using my one and only footwork, without a sound I silently approached behind Kuroyuki in an instant.

“.....!” She’s clearly surprised.

But even so, her terrifying reaction makes her turn back instantly and cuts me with her spear, that I dodged it by hairbreadth.

Her movements are dulled, it’s my chance!

“Second Dimensional Sword Skill – Dimension Flash.”

Taking the sword two handed, I swing the sword diagonally from up to down, slicing off the second dimension.

A thin white line that’s slowly expanding can be seen— it feels like splitting Kuroyuki to half again.

As the line contracts and disappears, a shockwave bursts towards Kuroyuki’s direction.

Even though my strength isn’t comparable to Nightwalker’s, but it’s still stronger than a dragon’s strength.

Even so, Kuroyuki managed to hold on at least 90% of this and only suffered by flying in mid-air.

I continued by approaching to her with ‘Silent Step’ again.

“First Dimensional Sword Skill – Edge Down.”

Swinging the sword vertically downwards, I sliced the first dimension, hitting Kuroyuki’s abdomen.

A large crashing sound could be hear as Kuroyuki was violently knocked on the ground with this attack, leaving a crater.

But yet, not a sound.

Not even a breath of pain.

Not even a small huff.

She stood back up again— undamaged, not even her clothes.

“...Really?” Vexed, I let out a sigh.

“...Cold Sanctuary.” Kuroyuki whispers, with her three fingers pointing at me.

Snow and ice circulated and gathered around me.

...It’s really the same technique again. So she’s really telling me to do that...

I sheathed the sword I’m holding, then looked at her.

I breathe deeply and close my eyes, concentrating my attack on the points I wanted.

“Sword Drawing Arts – Third Dimensional Slash.”

I draw out the sword and attacked her in a distance. Slicing off the third dimension with multiple slashes.

There’s clearly no doubt that it was a hit. But—

...She’s really scary.

I’m starting to think she’s a monster when she stood back up and glaring at me with a scornful look.

But something pops out in my mind instead, as I recalled the crack sound from the kick I gave her earlier.

“An invisible armour made from ice?” I asked.

“...Correct.” Kuroyuki nodded her head in response.

Really... I guessed correctly. Her body was covered with an invisible armour that she made with her ice. Her ice was so hard that even a full swing from Nightwalker that can destroy a building can’t break it. I need to think calmly and find a way to defeat her...

Before I can even realize, her fingers are pointing at me.

“...Frozen Storm.”

A large pile of snow and ice (at least two meters tall) howled towards me.

Alright then, I will end this.

“First Dimensional Sword Skill – Silent Blade Spectre...!”

I thrust the sword forth with a god-like speed. Not leaving a trace of sound.

A thin straight line of 5 metres long appeared and expanded slowly.

As it contracts, it pierces through the thick snow and ice and hit her forehead.

Even though the shockwave isn't that strong and her ice didn't break, but yet...

Her head couldn't withstand the shock as she fainted and collapsed on the ground.

With a large 'beep' sound, the match ended along with the ice and snow that disappeared as well.

'WINNER, LUCIFER NIGHTWALKER VON NIGHTMARE.'

And thus, it's my victory.

.....there aren't anyone watching.

.....I`m hungry.

It`s a nice thing that the special class has a kitchen section, as well as fresh delivered ingredients for me to cook.

Adding a little olive oil on the frying pan, the fragrance and the aroma of the oil stimulated my stomach and make my stomach acid go with a growl.

As I wait for the oil to be pre-heated on the frying pan, I added seasoning into a fresh chicken egg that I cracked on to the bowl. The seasonings are pepper, black pepper, some soy sauce along with a little salt.

After frying the egg into half done, I added two servings of well-steamed rice into the frying pan then further increase the heat of the stove board and give a little flip and mix them together. I added some spring onions as well as soy sauce again to enrich the taste.

Lastly, I added another half of the freshly scrambled egg and cover the rice, the rice shone with golden colour after I cooked it a little more. I shoved off the fried rice on to two plates, then placed a small piece of mint leaf on top.

My “Golden Fried Rice’ is done!

Just as a feeling of blissful satisfaction came over me from doing my job, I`ve finished preparing dinner. Since there`s nobody else than Kuroyuki and I remained in the special class.

I set down two servings of the dinner with a clatter. The appetising scent of a perfectly cooked fried rice resounded beautifully.

On the other hand, Kuroyuki still remains unconscious— she`s sleeping beautifully on the adjustable chair.

After the match, I never thought that I would need to ‘princess carry’ her all the way back to this room.

Her skin is really smooth and cold— so cold that it froze both of my hands. Because of that I need to endure the throbbing pain all the way till I placed her on the chair, that part of it went frozen as well.

I sat next to Kuroyuki, staring at her sleeping face.

...She`s so cute. Her breathing sound gives resemblance to a cat.

I have a feeling of déjà vu. I wondered where I have seen this before...

Now, it`s time for my experiment.

Step one, prepare a cup of hot water and place it on the table.

Step two, poke her cute face and feel the smoothness of her skin. It was smooth, soft, cold and— ow, a frozen finger.



Step three, dip your frozen finger into the hot water and observe. The ice melted but surprisingly the hot water turned cold after a second.

Repeat the process again by using a cup of room temperature.

As expected, the water turned to ice immediately with my finger stuck in a block of ice.

Conclusion, Kuroyuki's ice is far too abnormally cold that it continues to freeze its surrounding even if she's not controlling it.

THUNK!

I purposely break the ice loudly to wake her up. ...But even after all that ruckus, she's still asleep.

The longer I stared at her, the more I'm getting attracted by her.

She's so cute... How can such a girl this sweet exist...?

My eyes started to spin. My mind is getting cloudy.

I can't hold my urge to touch her, where I inadvertently placed my hand on her head.

I'd expect my hand would freeze up. But it didn't, that's good.

Her hair is really soft, smooth and fragrant. It really seems like patting a cat's head when I gently stroke her head.

"WAH...?"

A cold hand suddenly cover my eyes— blocking the view of the beautiful girl in front of me.

Although I can't see now, but I can tell that it was Kuroyuki's hand.

"Oh...? Kuroyuki finally you are awake. By the way, what are you do— AHH!!?"

CRACK! (The sound of my skull cracking)

Unleashing her anger, Kuroyuki mercilessly pour her strength into her grip.

"OW! OW! OW! KUROYUKI STOP SQUEEZING I CAN HEAR MY SKULL CRACKING FROM THE INSIDES ALREADY!!!"

"...What are you doing...?" As she question me, she loosen up her grip, but her hand is still attached to my head.

Her eyes was like a demon's that gives an image of shooting laser beams on me. (My imagination)

"Hah... Hah... Oh? I'm just poking your face— GUAHH!!? "

CRACKCRACK!! (The sound of my skull cracking again)

She doesn't like honesty at all. I'm being a nice guy here...!

"AH!!! I GET IT I SWEAR I WILL NOT POKE YOUR FACE ANYMORE!!!"

"...Why did you stroke my head...?" She doesn't have any intention to let her hand go completely.

I can feel that she's glaring at me like shooting a laser beam that's going to fry me. (Again, my imagination)

"Ah, about that. You looked cute so I stroke— ACK!!?"

CRACKCRACKCRACK!!! (The sound of my skull cracking intensely)

"...I will definitely, not forgive, perverts...!"

BUT I'M NOT A PERVERT!! IS IT REALLY WRONG TO SAY YOU ARE CUTE!!?

"ARGHH!!! KUROYUKI PLEASE FORGIVE ME ALREADY ACTUALLY I WAS TRYING TO WAKE YOU UP ALL THIS TIME!!!"

Obviously I was lying. If I don't then my head will be squashed.

"...N..! You are lying...!"

Is it too obvious? She hate lies too and lying is utterly useless in front of her. She continued to squeeze my head with that demon's grip of hers.

"ARGHH!!? NO I REALLY DIDN'T I EVEN COOKED FOOD FOR YOU!!! HURRY AND LET GO I CAN FEEL MY BRAIN GETTING SQUEEZE!!?"

I can tell that she's looking at the two dishes on the dining table.

...Finally, she let her demon's grip to rest. My eyeballs feels like getting crushed and my vision went blurry.

There's even blood— my blood dripping on the floor. Just how strong her grip is?!

Kuroyuki walks towards the dining section, and I tailed behind her as I wipe off my blood.

"...I never imagined an idiot like you would know how to cook." As she sits and stare at the dishes, her facial expression clearly looks amazed.

What's with the insult that you were able to say so casually?

"It's going to turn cold soon." As I replied, I sat next to her.

"...is it edible?" She asked, as if it's telling me it's okay even if it taste horrible.

"What nonsense are you saying? Of course it is!" I replied with confidence.

I'm really good at cooking, because I'm the one who manage the household work for eight years.

She took a small spoon of rice, and eats it elegantly. As expected from the most perfect girl in this academy.

On the other hand, I can't really move my jaw too much after all the squeezing she did to my face.

"...Un. It's good." She compliments, with a satisfying look.

"Since I cooked yours, so you should cook some for me as well right?" I asked shamelessly.

I really wanted to taste Kuroyuki's cooking. But if I did say that to her, she will definitely break my head.

"...I don't cook for perverts." She gave me a fierce look.

It's pretty obvious that she'd label me as that, but even so, I don't want her to remind me every day that I'm a pervert, right?

"I'm not a per—"

CLAP! (The sound of Kuroyuki's hand placed on my face)

CREAK! (The sound of my skull getting squeezed)

CRACK! (The sound of my skull getting cracked)

"GARGHHHHHHHH!!?" I screamed in pain.

"...Say that again and I will smash you to bits." As she glared at me, she let go of her grip.

...Her eyes are scary. That doesn't affect me.

"Don't just go and squeeze my head...!" I rubbed my head.

"...No guys touched me before..." She murmured with an irritated look.

Kuroyuki held her hands in a defensive posture around her chest. It makes my eyes inadvertently look at it... Wait, am I? No, no I'm not, I'm really not looking. It just entered my line of sight for a bit and I was momentarily distracted.

"Oh...? Then I'm sure am lucky— AAHHHHHHHHHH!!? MY EYES!!!"

Kuroyuki stabs her fingers into my eyes without any hesitation. It hurts like hell. I thought that she was going to use her grip on me.

"...you pervert...!" Hearing her statement, I knew the reason that she stab my eyes. It's because she noticed that I looked at her chest.

"That's not where you should stab!"

My eyes are getting teary... I even lost my vision.

“...Do you mean I should stab your heart?”

“NO WAIT THAT`S NOT IT PLEASE DON`T STAB ME WITH A KNIFE!!!”

I calm her down because she already forge an ice knife with serious intent to kill.

.....

After both of us settled down and ate our dinner, Kuroyuki took the plates to the basin for a wash.

“Kuroyuki.”

“...Un.”

“Since I win the duel, can you tell me about the ‘Twenty Seals’ now?”

It was just an excuse for me to ask her about the seals that I currently have.

Rubbing the plate with a sponge and some soap, she asked me a simple question.

“...why were you sealed?”

“Sorry... but I have no idea.”

“...Do you know anything from the sealer?”

“I don` t know who did this... but I do know the key to unlock the seal is the ‘Frosting Ring of Blizzard’, that the ex-student council president was wearing.”

That was one of the reason I came to this academy. The highest executive that recommended me was just a way to get into this academy.

“...!”

Kuroyuki`s eyes slightly widen after she heard this.

“Since you are the ex-student council president and you are wearing a ring, is that the Frosting Ring of Blizzard?”

Kuroyuki has a ring on her left hand on the middle finger.

“.....It is.” She advert her eyes away from me.

“Then... what should I do?”

To found the ring that quickly is totally out of my expectations. It`s just that, I have no idea how to undo the seal. Perhaps she might know what to do.

“...I don`t know...”

“EH? SAY WHAT?!”

I didn't expect this.

"Tch... why is this happening to me...!"

.....My emotions is starting to boil. The stress accumulated all these years is starting to leak out.

"...I'm sorry..."

The moment I heard those apologetic words, I raised my head and looked at Kuroyuki.

...Her expression was so sad. There's tiny droplets gathered on both of the corner of her blue eyes, as if it's going to fall at any moment.

I was shocked and frustrated.

.....Why are you making that sad face like it's your fault...!

"YOU SHOULDN'T APOLOGIZE!!" I yelled to her.

Kuroyuki's surprised look is what that makes me felt more painful.

Whether it was a mere pity or she really does feel sorry, it's not her fault at all. She's not in any right to apologize to me.

What I'm upset, is towards me who can't do anything right. I hate this part of me.

Not good... my mind is starting to feel cloudy.

"I need to get some fresh air..."

I silently walk out from the special class, leaving Kuroyuki behind, alone.

All the way as I walked towards the large pink tree, I did not think of anything. I walked silently, holding in my frustration with all I could.

I reached.

I looked up...

...and sighed deliberately.

"(Whoosh...)"

I jumped inside.

I sat on a comfortable spot and leaned myself on the tree.

The dropping pink lights constantly drops randomly from above, but the light from the tree never grows dim.

Some falls on my head, on my body.

I reached out my hand, and caught one drop of light.

I opened my hand and looked at the light on my palm. It sparkled beautifully... and soon disappears.

Not bad...

...this beautiful scenery... is able to calm my heart.

[Di Di]

Someone called. ...Who is it at this late night?

"...Hello? Who is it—"

"BIG BROTHER!!! WHY BIG BROTHER DIDN'T CALL RESTIA!!?"

Argh...! My ears hurt. Oh, it's my cute little sis...

"Don't yell all of the sudden when you called. Besides, I'm about to call you—"

"BIG BROTHER. DIDN'T RESTIA TOLD YOU NOT TO LIE?"

"I'm sorry Restia please forgive me."

Sometimes my little sis is pretty scary.

"So big brother, how are you doing the first day? Restia missed you so much that it feels like a million years—"

"Restia, it's only been the first day."

Just how on earth much do you miss me...?

"But Restia really missed big brother... Restia missed brother's scent, brother's touch, and really wants to hugs brother, feels brother, kisses brother, take a bath—"

"YOU HOPELESS FREAK!!! WHAT ARE YOU EVEN TRYING TO DO WITH YOUR OWN BROTHER!!!?"

My house have a hopeless freak.

"Big brother please don't yell so loudly, Restia will cry..."

"(Sigh)... What a hopeless idiot you are."

"Same as big brother. Ehehe."

Having a little family reunion time is really comforting, especially when we exchange our pointless conversations between each other.

After all, we are a family. Even though not contributing much, their existence is truly important for us to move on.

"By the way, big brother. How is your first day?"

Speaking of that, the conclusion is...

"Your big brother almost died."

"EHHHH?!!! WHAT HAPPENED!?"

"A dangerous frozen maiden with scary eyes and a deadly demon's grip almost killed your brother."

"...That sounded like big sis."

Hmm...? Big sis...?

"We have a big sis?"

"Oh... Restia forgot that big brother don't have any memories..."

"Oh? So it was the mysterious girl that you loved so much?"

"Big brother is an idiot you know?"

"Why say such cruel words to your brother? Your brother is the smartest person in the family after all..."

"Big brother stop lying to yourself."

"Your big brother only split to two parts! It's not like your big brother's brain is split to half..."

"Big brother is really stupid..."

"Oi. I will get angry."

I have two personalities that was split out by the large black magic sealing sword. One was called 'idiot' and the other one is known as 'genius.'

"So who is this frozen maiden brother is talking about?"

"A cold, hopeless, cruel, dangerous weapon, that hunts, kills and freezes everyone to death."

"That sounded so much like big sis."

"Who is this 'big sis' anyway?"

"Restia isn't really sure... So what is this 'frozen maiden's' name?"

"Your big brother doesn't even want to talk about it."

"Big brother really dislike her...?"

"No that's not it. Your big brother will get nightmares if your big brother speaks her name."

"Is she really that scary?"

"You will know it when you see h—"

"MASTER!!! ARE YOU THERE!!? RUBY REALLY MISSED YOU!!!"

Argh...! Damn it. My ears hurts like hell. Oh, it`s my cute magical pet.

"Don`t yell all of the sudden. My ear hurts."

"Ruby really missed how master strokes Ruby`s head, washed her, cleaned her, make her tidy, bath with her—"

"YOU HOPELESS PERVERTED FREAK!!! WHAT ARE YOU EVEN TRYING TO DO TO YOUR OWN MASTER!!!?"

Shit. My family has two hopeless freaks.

"By the way, brother. Ruby gone nuts for a while after you went out—"

"NYAAA!!? RESTIA!! RUBY DOESN`T WANT TO LET MASTER KNOW!!!"

"WHAT ON EARTH DID YOU DO TO OUR HOUSE...?"

"N-NYAAA!!? MA-MASTER...!"

"Well... big brother, Ruby only smashes a few walls, destroyed some part of the floors, and left some holes at the roof— MPH!!?"

"NYAAA!!! RUBY DOESN`T WANT MASTER TO BE ANGRY!!! PLEASE DON`T LET MASTER KNOW!"

"DO YOU SERIOUSLY THINK I DIDN`T HEARD THAT RUBY?"

"NYAAAAAAAAA!!?"

"Well brother?"

"Restia you fix it."

"Roger that."

"AND I WILL DEAL WITH YOU LATER WHEN I GET BACK."

"M-MASTER!!?"

"By the way, big brother."

"Hmm...?"

"Actually..."



“Yeah...?” My little sis turned strange suddenly.

“Ruby and I just came out of the bath. We aren’t wearing anything—”

“YOU TWO PERVERTED FREAKS!!! GO AND WEAR YOUR CLOTHES RIGHT NOW!!!”

“Eh... But Restia wanted to show big brother and Ruby’s hot body—”

“EVEN THOUGH YOUR BODIES ARE HOT, CAN’T YOU AT LEAST BE EMBARRASSED ABOUT IT!?”

“Well... Big brother already seen us naked plenty of times, so it’s okay.”

“IT’S BECAUSE YOU TWO ALWAYS BARGE IN WHEN I’M TAKING A BATH!!!”

“Big brother should be grateful that you have two beautiful girls bathing with you.”

“...Restia.”

“Yes brother?”

“DO YOU WANT TO LIVE...?”

There are times that I know how to be serious too.

“Eekk! Sorry big brother! Restia and Ruby will go and wear her clothes right now!”

“Geez, take care of yourself.”

”Roger that!” “Yes master.”

As I sat there, my heart is starting to feel calmer...

[Message From: Restia]

Oh? It’s a text message from Restia.

‘Goodnight big brother! Restia will always miss you!’

Heh. My little sis really is cute—

‘P.S. Does big brother want a photo of Ruby naked?’

...or not. Just how much of a pervert you are and you think I am?!

[Message From: Ruby]

Oh? It’s a text message from Ruby.

‘Master, Ruby will take care of Restia, don’t worry. Goodnight.’

.....like seriously, you are the cause that my house is in danger.

'P.S. Does master want a photo of Restia naked?'

I WILL PUNISH THEM WHEN I GET BACK.

[Message From: Restia]

Huh? A photo from Restia?

Don't tell me... Oh, it's them in their pyjamas on the bed. With cheerful smiles on their faces too.

It's been a long day today, I'm getting tired all of the sudden.

Heh. Sooner or later... I'm going to remove this annoying seal...!

I closed my eyes and slept on this tree.

2-3

Tweet~ tweet~

My consciousness awakes.

The sound of birds singing in the early morning is rather pleasant.

.....Ow! My back hurts like hell. Having a sleep on a tree without pillows or a soft cushion gave me an uncomfortable feeling as I woke up.

As I opened my eyes, I saw the spectacular scene once more.

Heh. The scenery of it whether in day or night was always beautiful.

“.....Hmm?”

I smell something fragrant. So indescribably fragrant.

It's definitely not from the tree, the tree itself doesn't have such a wonderful fragrance. I wonder where it is coming from....

Even though my right arm is a little numb, but I can still feel something soft and cold.

Curious on what is giving me such a comfortable feeling, I look to my right—

EHHHHHHHHHHHHH??!!!!!! KUROYUKI SHIROHA!!??

I'm so utterly shocked that I couldn't say another word.

Kuroyuki's in her black silk dress pyjamas and bare-footed, sleeping quietly next to me with purring sound like a cat's.

Now I understand what they meant by curiosity kills the cat.

What on earth happened...? I don't recall having any events with her after I walked out from the special room. So why is she here?

I tried to move my body, but I couldn't.

Her head is leaning on my shoulder.

Her fingers tightly clinked tightly to mine.

It makes me happy, except for the part that the coldness from her body makes my shoulder went numb.

What should I do...?

Normally I would push anyone down from this height or slap them till they wake up without a second thought. But since it's her...

...I can't do anything because she will definitely squeeze my head without a second thought.

"...Nn....."

Oh, she's awake. Thank goodness this situation ended quickly.

"...Eh?"

Hello? Kuroyuki...? Why are you making such a shocked expression?

"...What did you do to me?"

Moving back at a fast speed, embracing her body as she took a defensive position.

"That's my line! Why are you here and sleeping on my shoulder?!"

"...Impossible. I slept at my room last night."

I will assume that she's not lying.

"Did you sleep walk?"

"...Even if I do, I won't end up coming here."

Hmm... You slept in your dorm last night but ended up getting here. So in conclusion...

"Ah! I know! Perhaps you missed me too much so you came here— AHH!!?"

"...What kind of nonsense are you spouting?"

"OW!!! I'M SORRY PLEASE LET GO OF YOUR DEMON'S GRIP!!!"

"...Speak. What did you do to me?"

She's threatening me with hundreds of spears circulating me, ready to strike anytime.

"How would I know?! ...I didn't even touched you!"

I noticed that her eyes is secretly looking somewhere.

".....!"

Her face suddenly turned red. She jumped down immediately with her spears disappearing as well.

I checked, there's nothing here. Not even her hair. I wonder why she is getting embarrassed for....

"I better clean myself and go for an early jog. Hup."

Not to care too much, I jumped down and decided to take an early jog.

A cold wind embraced my face. Why did I have a feeling of Déjà vu lately?

“.....Get back...!”

Who`s saying that...? It seems like Kuroyuki.

Whoa!? What`s with all these people?!

“Kuroyuki I love you! Please go out with me!”

“Kuroyuki! You are very cute in your pyjamas!!!”

“Yeah!!!”

Hearing such words from the shouting and cheering during my landing, I can`t helped but to be amazed by such a scene.

So the rumours are true after all, there`s a group of boys and girls swarming towards Kuroyuki.

...What`s with this number!? There`s more than seventy of them!?

Kuroyuki is being cornered by them till that she was leaning on the tree helplessly in her attire. But still, there`s still a small gap between them.

There...!

I made a perfect landing in front of Kuroyuki.

“What the? Who are you!?”

“Huh? Isn`t he the new guy that transferred yesterday?!”

“Didn`t he duelled with Kuroyuki yesterday?”

“What happened?”

“I don`t know. I was knocked out.”

“Me too.”

Yesterday most of the students are sent to the infirmary, but the results should have been known online if they checked...

“It doesn`t matter. Kuroyuki will always be number one!”

“Yeah!!!”

What the hell are you fools even saying...?

“...By the way Kuroyuki...”

.....Perhaps those guys were too loud, she can`t hear me. She`s terrified with those large numbers of students swarming her. She didn`t even notice my existence... I want to cry.

So the reason her face turned red it's because of those swarming students?

Yeah, in such a beautiful black silk dress pyjamas... showing her beautiful thighs and legs with that reddened face... wow, it even gives a sparkling feel from the sunlight.

Anyone would have get excited and carry her away then place her on their bed.

...oh well. She will definitely hit me later.

"...Excuse me for a moment."

"...Eh?"

I 'princess carry' Kuroyuki and escaped away from the crowd with 'Silent Step', then running away at high speed. Kuroyuki did not show any excitement of getting carried in such a way. Her face changed to expressionless the moment I carried her.

Why? You could have felt at least a little embarrassed.

"Eh!!? They are gone!?"

"There he is! That bastard's taking Kuroyuki away! Get him!"

Exaggerated to say... but seventy students chased me in the early morning. What a scene.

"Hah! You fools can't even run properly! Hold tight Kuroyuki!"

"...Huh...?"

She dig her fingers slightly into my clothes as she muttered. As soon as she did, I increased my running speed till I ran three second per hundred meter.

"What the!? He's too fast!"

I successfully escaped from them.

Took no less than 15 seconds, I reached the special building.

Actually my room is inside that building too.

Phew. Nothing but a great morning exercise. Especially carrying a 'load' when running.

As I slowly carry her in my arms and make my way towards my room—

"...put me down already..."

...my load, Kuroyuki ordered me to place her down.

Such cruel words. She should have said 'thank you for saving me, please carry me a little longer~' or even 'I will give you a kiss~'.

“...maybe till our room. You are barefooted after all.”

I don't have any intention at all on putting her down. I'm thinking of carrying her to my room.

But that'd be impossible, she will kill me if I did that.

“...N...!”

“...sorry.”

...whoa, my hand would even slip. Her legs are so smooth... and the softness...

The softest and smoothest thigh of all is not a mass of fat, but a high-quality muscles born of training. When they are finally coated with a girl's fat, what you can find is a dream-like miracle.

Ow, ow, ow dreams doesn't last long. My hands are so cold that it hurts.

Finally... the second floor!

Before Kuroyuki can even give me a warning with her eyes, I placed her down.

“...Die...!”

Without a second word, Kuroyuki unleashes her demon's grip. Luckily I expected this to happen and dodge her grip—

BAM (The sound of me being tripped)

PAK (The sound of Kuroyuki's hand smacking on my face)

CRACK (The sound of my skull getting crushed)

“DO YOU REALLY NEED TO GO TO SUCH AN EXTEND?!!”

It's futile no matter how much I resisted. Now my head is bleeding again.

“...You shouldn't have touch me...”

“You can't even hear me with all those idiots around shouting. So I will have to carry you by force when they lay down their guards.”

It's surprising that I can still talk clearly despite her grip is covering my mouth.

“...Close your eyes and clench your teeth...”

.....She's not even listening. Right now her face is full with 'You are dead' expression and she's clenching her fist already. Such an unreasonable girl.

Here it comes...! I won't let you...!

I deflected her fist with my right palm.

BAM!!!

This sound echoed through the whole second floor.

Ow, my ears.

Her punch made a dent on the floor that's made out of titanium. Titanium...?!

Damn... her strength's around or even better than my current level. It's enough to break my nose at this rate.

".....!" She's stunned.

It's because I deflected her point blank range attack.

I quickly grab her hand and pull it away from my face, then I quickly get back on my feet and ran towards my room.

The door automatically authenticated my school badge, opening the door towards my room.

"...You can't escape."

I hurried in as I press the close button my screen.

She's coming! Hurry up and close already...!

"...Phew." I sighed a heave of enlightenment.

The door managed to close in time before she can even touch it. Surely she wouldn't have wrecked the door towards my room.

What a troublesome morning. I saved her from those crowds, not only that she didn't thank me but rather chooses to kill me instead.

Well then, how comfortable is my room...?

I was totally surprised.

.....Is this... a presidential suite room in a luxury hotel...?

The bed is even larger than a typical King-Sized bed. Even three persons shouldn't be a problem. The pillow and mattress is firm, temperature adjustable, smooth, and... auto tidying function. The blanket is too temperature adjustable.

So spacious.

Game consoles, coffee making machine... is that a three dimensional system?!

Ah... that means I will be using this to do the tasks from the principal...

'CLICK'



...what's this sound...?

Another door from my room opened.

It seems it was connected to another room, where that room was another room for another special student. Speaking of which, there's only two special students in this academy. One is me, and the other one is..... Ah.

"...even if you surrender I won't forgive you."

Kuroyuki barged into my room from another door, it doesn't have any locks.

"Hey, don't just simply barge into someone's room!"

"...Then I will ensure you that this room will be your graveyard."

She declared such a dangerous statement without a care...!

"...I guess I will have to use force!" I declared.

But with such a sexy attire... surely she won't attack me while wearing that right...?

"...how foolish." Kuroyuki uttered.

Gah...! I was too distracted by her dress...!

Kuroyuki appeared in front of me in less than a blink of an eye, reaching out her right hand.

Is she trying to use her grip again...?

"AHHHHHHHHHH!!! MY EYES?!!!" I cried from her surprise.

Her left hand...!

...her fingers drilled into my eyes...! I lost my vision completely...!

This sound... is she preparing a punch...? Must act quickly...!

I quickly squat down and gave a low right spin kick.

"...you know this will work only once." Kuroyuki uttered before my kick could hit her.

BAM!

Ow...!? It's so freaking hard compared to last time...!

Did she reinforced her armour...?

So blurry... can't see properly...!

"...Shhh..." She whispered.

Ow, ow my right hand is so cold...!

“What did you do—?”

‘BAM!’

I can’t tell what she’s doing to me at all. But before I can get a clear view, the door connecting to her room slammed shut with icicles on the edge of the door, it’s frozen.

...must be her work.

...My right hand froze entirely. I can’t feel pain anymore since it got so apathetic from the cold. But as usual, I’m able to crack her ice.

Why did she freeze my right hand...?

...whatever, I’m going to take a shower. I’m so freakishly smelly.

My uniform and bag was sent to this room before I reach here yesterday, such an outstanding service.

I took a clean uniform from the upper part of the tall cupboard next to my large bathroom.

My bag is placed at the lower part of the cupboard... actually... how can they even carry it...?

Oh...? The hot water in the bathtub is ready, 75 degree Celsius.

Automatic system makes life so easy.

As I dipped myself and lay down to relax, it reminds me of my little sis and magical pet.

At times when I’m relaxing as I dip myself into the hot water, they barged in nearly every time when they are with me, stark naked.

...perverts.

I won’t do that to that Kuroyuki, okay? She will definitely kill me.

2-4

"Hey there..."

I greeted Kuroyuki as she walks in to the special from her room. Speaking of which, my room has another door connected to the special class.

Kuroyuki gave a slight nod and her usual cold smile as she fold her skirt and sat next to me elegantly.

Geez, this girl sure has a lovely fragrance on her. It's flooding into my nose.

"...Hello... pervert." Kuroyuki murmured.

"I'm surprised you can even say that with an innocent look."

"...you are sucking in my fragrance, aren't you?"

Ah, she noticed...

"That sounds perverted indeed... but no. Aren't you a pervert too...? I'm astonished you can even think of such perverted way."

"...they made a perverted face every time they breathe in deeply."

She muttered with a shaky voice and looking terrified and tired.

"Referring from experience... huh? That was hard on you." I gave my condolence.

".....there won't be a next time." She uttered with a fierce expression.

Is she talking to me or those perverts?

"Sorry Kuroyuki, teacher's not feeling well yesterday."

Whoa!?

A female teacher in her office lady suit with a peach colour hair and orange eyes suddenly popped up in front of the large screen that's in front of us.

It was a hologram. Is she teaching us from her personal teaching room?

"Are you the new transfer student?" She asks.

That was sudden, and you don't really need to ask. No matter 360 degrees how you look I'm definitely the new transfer student.

"Lucifer Nightwalker von Nightmare is it?" She asks again.

Do I not look like it? You are even looking at my data.

"Well... Kuroyuki's a bit—"

“...Teacher.”

The teacher was stopped instantly by Kuroyuki's glare that's preventing her to speak another word.

The teacher looks terrified and she's trembling.

“Teacher, your name?”

To calm her, I asked for the teacher's name in a sort of polite and casual way.

“Luna Ainsworth, just call me Luna.” She winked to me.

Either way, I shouldn't have asked. It's troublesome to remember someone's name that can't teach me anything.

“I think I will call you teacher, if I call by teacher's name, it makes me feel old like you.”

Even though I took a rough guess that her age was around twenty six.

“Y-Your teacher was only in her twenties you know?” She said, while hiding the last number.

How accurate. I'm correct after all.

“That's enough to make me feel old.” I gave her a smirk.

“How rude...! Your teacher's not old at all!”

She seems to be shaken by my remark and almost lost her composure.

Don't fret. You are definitely in your twenties. But I'm just sixteen, what do you expect?

“By the way, we are having mock team battle with the S class students today, please go to the practice room, okay?”

“No.” “...No.”

Surprisingly, Kuroyuki and I have the same thoughts flowing in our minds.

“Eh?! You two, why?!”

“...They are weak.” “They are weaklings.”

It's easy to determine whether they are weak. Since the difference in our entering exam scores has such a big gap.

“...you should go, I shall stay here.” Kuroyuki demanded.

Kuroyuki intends to push the troublesome matter to me. There's no way I will be doing that.

“Why? You are the strongest, so you should go.” I retorted.

“...You took the title yesterday.” She refuted.

“You dare to even say that, you liar.” I uttered.

“You two...! If both of you are not coming, t-teacher will cry you know!”

The teacher can't hold her frustration and finally interrupted. But what's with that elementary kid reason...?

“...Fine.”

Kuroyuki unwillingly accepted, but she's not letting me to escape from this either. Her eyes are telling me 'if you don't go, you are dead.'

“Then, I will be waiting both of you at the central training room.” The teacher smiles generously.

Ah, she disappears.

And thus, the both of us went to the practice room.

Central Main Building. First Year Training Room. First floor.

This isn't the training room that I went for my entering battle test.

This room is much more spacious compared to the training room that I have my exam. At the very least, it's ten meters high and it's width is like having two football fields together.

The moment I stepped in as I walk to the centre together with Kuroyuki, several students can be seen as they are having their blabber and chatter about us.

There are exactly ten students. They are gathered on the centre of the room, it's students from the S class. The rankings in our status quo is quite obvious too. Because their uniforms are black in colour, unlike us— it's white.

"Huh...? Who's this new guy?"

A loud and clear male voice echoed through the training room. Clearly those words are referring to me.

How rude! Who said that?!

I quickly glare towards the direction of the rude student. I realize he's glaring at me with a pissed off look, but his glare doesn't seem to be the jealous sort of glare.

What's with his hair colour...? It's dyed with fire colour, as if his hair is burning with flames. His eyes shines with golden yellow. He seems a little more muscular and a little taller and slightly broader than me.

"He's the special transfer student..."

Another guy spoke. He seems to be talking to the flame hair dude.

As he nudges his spectacles, he looks at me with a sharp glint in his eyes.

His hair has the rich colour of brown colour, as if it's a mixture of the colour of sand and soil.

Judging from his appearance and first impression, he seems to be a book-smart type.

"YOU BASTARD!!!"

A roaring voice sounded across the training room thoroughly and loudly.

Among all of those that I have heard, this is the rudest. That 'bastard' he yelled was definitely me.

HE'S SO DEAD.

It's from the left.

The moment I looked to the left, something black flitting in towards my eyes— it was a kick, flying on its way towards me.

This kick was not meant to be fatal or something, basically it was just an amateur flying kick.

My body instincts made me evade his lousy kick reflexively and reflexively added a punch, aiming for his abdomen.

WHAM!

...I hit something hard.

It's not the person who came flying with a kick, but rather it's the rude guy with the flame colour hair. He was knocked back for quite a long distance till he's able to stop completely.

He's able to block my punch with his palm and reduce the force by jumping backwards in just a split second... is he even in S class...?

"(Ow. Damn it...! Even the armour can't hold it well... almost broke my arm...!)"

On times like these, normally one should have shouted in pain. But instead, he's whispering to himself and I can barely even hear it.

"Ah, sorry. I did it on reflex." I said.

I apologized to him because I hit the wrong person, even though it was his fault for blocking.

"DON'T LOOK AWAY HERE COMES ANOTHER KICK!"

...It's him again, so annoying... I hope he eats my fist and shut up.

...Wait. Are those magic circle...?

Just when that annoying guy sprint towards me like an idiot, several magic circle appeared in mid-air.

Strings shoots out from the centre of the circles, wrapping that annoying guy quickly like a larvae, except for his head.

"WHOA!!? HEY PUT ME DOWN HEARTLOCK!"

With an irritated look on his face, the rudest guy yelled to the person who tied him up.

Whether who that person is, I really appreciate that smart action.

"Shut up. Do you really think those needless legs of yours can even graze a special student?"

It's a girl.

As those sharp words pierced across our ears, I looked straight towards the direction where she is.

Aside from her emotionless expression, her beautiful purple hair, purple sparkly eyes, her figure and her face are all considered as higher than average. In other words, she's another type of beauty that's around Persia's level.

I can tell that she's close to the guy with the brown hair earlier. Because she's literally sticking to him.

...Anyways, I don't care. It's time to give that 'bastard' a punishment!

The moment I look at him clearly, my body was stunned for a while as I recall something.

He looks familiar. Did I met him before?

"GIVE ME BACK MY SWORD YOU BASTARD!!"

...I remembered. He was the guy that lend me his sword yesterday. It's quite surprising that he's so obsessive with his sword that his personality changed dramatically.

"I forgot." I replied.

"WHAT DO YOU MEAN YOU FORGOT!? YOU ARE SUPPOSED TO RETURN BACK SOMEONE'S BELONGING AFTER YOU BORROW— MPH!!!"

The string girl added a few more strings to cover his mouth.

"How noisy." She said, with an emotionless expression.

Suddenly, a card flew and cuts off the main strings that was tying him.

"Now, now, Rumelia just put him down. And by the way, congrats for being Ranked 1 on your first day."

It's a girl's voice and it seems familiar. As the card spins back, she caught the card skilfully with her two fingers.

Oh, it's Persia. While walking towards me, she gave me a sweet and generous smile.

"I see. You really are an S class student." I said as I stared straight at her eyes.

It's not hard to figure it out though, because most leaders are located at the top classes.

"Is this your way to greet others? Quite different from what I imagined..." She replied.

Persia seems dumbfounded, it's cute. She noticed that I'm different compared to yesterday.

"You shouldn't be causing such a large commotion you know?" She continued.

"It's him, not me." I protested, pointing my finger towards the sword guy that was still half-tied on the floor.

"Oi. Don't just drag me in you bastard." He glared at me angrily.



"It was your fault indeed. You should have said 'please return my sword' and not shout and attack me like a hooligan. And yesterday where did you disappeared to? You hooligan."

"Stop calling me hooligan you bastard...! I went to the infirmary!" He gritted his teeth.

"It's because you were knocked out you spineless hooligan. Rather than went, you were sent there!"

"Shut up you sword stealing bastard." I was right, he decided to avoid this by telling me to shut up.

"...Enough...!" Even though her voice isn't loud, but yet it came across our ears clearly.

Her patience has reached to the maximum.

Kuroyuki barged in and use her deadly glare to both of us, ordering both of us to silence.

".....!"

Leaking out a feared expression on his face, the sword guy shuts his mouth tight in an instant.

But too bad, Kuroyuki's glare doesn't work on me at all.

"Oh come on Kuroyuki, it's definitely was his fault— OWOWOWOWOWOW!!?"

Showing no mercy, she mercilessly clamped my head tight with her right hand.

"...Didn't I told you to shut up?" She uttered with an extremely cold voice.

"IF HE'S BEING NICE FROM THE START THEN WE COULD HAVE SETTLED THIS PEACEFULLY!!!"

I continued to ignore her demands and pain from my head.

"DON'T JUST BLAME EVERYTHING ON ME YOU BASTARD!!!" He yelled, with an annoyed look.

"So annoying." "...How noisy."

"ARRGH!?" "AHHHHHH!!?"

By tying him tighter and clamping my head harder, both the string girl and Kuroyuki unleash their own fury towards us.

"ARGHHHHH!!!! PERSIA DON'T JUST STAND THERE CAN'T YOU LEND A HAND!?"

While screaming in pain, I called out to the only person I know for help—

"...It's the first time Kuroyuki did this..."

...but yet she's standing on the sides with her eyes looking blank and her mouth mumbling strange things.

"This is painful to watch."

“Yeah...”

“Agreed.”

The rest of the S class students averted their eyes away from us. I wonder why some of the guys seems jealous— CRACK

It hurts...!? Just what sort of insane technique did you use you demon!?

“YOU FOOLS HURRY UP AND HELP— MPH HH!!??”

As the sword hooligan tried to ask for help, the string girl shuts his mouth instantly with more strings. Furthermore, his legs have been bent to an irregular angle.

“Annoying idiots like you should have rest in pain already.” The string girl said, emotionlessly.

“I have no comments.”

The brown hair guy next to the string girl nudges his glasses and looks to the side, pretending as if nothing has happened.

Finally...! She finally release her hand...! My head is bleeding...!

“You should do it lighter next time... It hurts.” I mumbled.

“...I see. How about the next time is now...?” She replied.

As I complained to Kuroyuki, she responded by giving me a cold glare. It doesn't have any effect on me... could you stop with the glare already?

“No thanks it's more than enough.”

If it's Nightwalker, he would definitely apologize for nothing.

Speaking of which, that sword guy...

“MMPPHHH!!!!!!” (PUT ME DOWN!!!!!!)

Struggling and wiggling his body from the strings as much as he could, but yet there's no a small light of hope for him to escape from it.

.....Suddenly, I understood his pain very well.

I took his sword that was lying on the ground. I slowly approach to him and cuts the strings with his sword.

“Hah... Hah... Thanks you damn bastard.”

Even after letting him free, he's still as rude as ever. I regretted from helping him.

“You really don't want your sword back don't you?” I said with an irritated look.

"Alright settle down already you brats!"

Everyone's attention were attracted by the middle age voice coming from the door.

Huh...? Who is he?

A young looking man with a white hair, in a gentlemanly black suit set all the way from his clothes to his shoes, slowly walks to us along with teacher Luna Ainsworth behind him.

His left hand was stuffed into his left pocket, trying to look cool and his right hand was placed on his temple, seems like he's gotten a headache.

All of us was stunned by his sudden loud appearance, except for the string girl.

"...the principal."

Kuroyuki whispered to me, as if she's telling me to give respect. She then followed up an example by greeting the principal with a slight bow.

"Oh, if it's isn't the elegant <Winter Princess>."

The principal gave a little nod after he responded to Kuroyuki's slight bow.

How young is he...? He looks like in his twenties.

Perhaps it was because of me staring at the principal too passionately while guessing his age, the principal turned his head towards me with a gaze that has a mixture of irritated, annoyed, serious, gentle, welcomingly and excitement.

What the... such a complicated gaze... I'm surprised that I can even tell the contents.

"You special transferring brat, can't you at least settle down for a while? You even disturbed my early jog by making such a huge ruckus in the morning." He had an annoyed smile.

He's referring to this morning when I was princess carrying Kuroyuki on my hands as I ran away from seventy students that's chasing behind.

All of them suddenly stopped as I continued to run, I thought it's because they can't catch up to me at all... so it was him stopping them.

This old man..... he's really something. The vibes I'm feeling from him is rather complicated... I can't tell what he wants.

"It's their faults for bothering Kuroyuki, not me. If you dislike it then why don't you consider to tell those fools to scram?" I retorted against his remarks as I walk closer to him.

"Don't just say whatever you like, brat. I'm the principal of this academy...!"

It doesn't seem that he's using his authority as the principal to put a threat to me. I just can't tell what he's thinking at all. Is he messing with me...?

"If I say something normal like the others, then I wouldn't be considered as a special student at all."

As I make those statements clearly, I looked straight into his eyes without any hesitation.

"Hahaha! You sure are an interesting brat! It was worthy of me spending several months to look for you!"

He laughed excitedly, like a little boy that found a new toy.

"You damn old man, stop calling me brat." I sighed.

"I'm only forty-two...! Still young!" He took it seriously more than I thought.

Really...? But he looks really young.

"Saying that makes you look stupid you damn old man." I gave him a carefree look.

"Shut up already. Or else I will kick you out from this academy you damn brat." He looks irritated.

"Really? Then please do it you damn old man." I retorted.

He spends several months to look for me, there's no way he will expel me.

"...I will definitely hunt you down."

The sudden cold voice from behind shuddered me. It's Kuroyuki, with her hand soon placed on my left shoulder, locking it.

Huh...? Another hand on my head?

"E-EH!? KUROYUKI NOT THE GRIP— AHHHHHH!!?"

I suffered from the power of her grip.

"This... first time... Kuroyuki... partner stay..."

Persia's head gone haywire. The things she's muttering turns even weirder.

Aside from Persia's contents, I can even tell Kuroyuki is desperately making me to stay. Why...?

After slapping, rubbing and pulling Kuroyuki's diamond-hard grip for a few times, she finally decided to let go.

"(...this bastard is still special enough to affect even the princess and the principal...)" The sword hooligan is whispering in a very small voice.

The sword hooligan's gaze seems to be rather refreshed and savoured. It feels weird when he stares at me like that.

"Shut it you sword hooligan. I can hear it."

“Cheh, just give me back my sword already.” He stated.

Oh... I`m still holding onto his sword.

The sword hooligan reached out his hand— yet he`s standing nearly 40m away. He`s telling me to give him back by approaching to him, as if he`s superior than me.

I don`t care about things like these, but Kuroyuki`s hand is still on my shoulder. I can`t even move away from her hand`s range.

“Catch it.”

Without another word of warning and admonition, I simply threw it to him.

“Wait—!?”

Although it was nothing more than just a simple throw, but my strength made it flew like hitting a baseball with a bat.

The sword hooligan caught it— and slides and tumbles on the floor for at least ten meters.

My demonstration seems to be shocking for most of the students at S class.

“ARE YOU DOING THAT ON PURPOSE YOU BASTARD!?” He`s totally pissed off.

“Ah~ my bad.” I quickly broke my eye contact away from him.

“Enough already you brats. Now listen!” The principal shouted.

As earlier said, we are going to have a mock team battle practice. Team battles is one of the three battles required for the <Knight`s Tournament>.

As so, we were separated into two teams assigned by the principal where he randomly picked. Since me and Kuroyuki are the special students, we were chosen to be the leaders.

Of course, it`s easy to understand that we are going to fight with the opposite team— Kuroyuki.

Actually why bother...? She alone is able to defeat us all so I can`t really find any meaning to this...

Since Kuroyuki would likely destroy this building even if it were just a practice, so the place that we are going to practice will be carried out in the artificial dimension, where it`s time and space is still connected to reality.

It was created to avoid fatal injuries during the battle by forcing a dead player to be sent out from the artificial dimension.

Of course, since it`s hard for the judges and for the viewers to enjoy, built in cameras will be filming all the time.

If that`s so, if we were to be trapped inside Kuroyuki`s ice crystal, we won`t be sent out...

.....I really hate the principal. Why this group?

My team here has the annoying sword guy, the flame hair dude with a pissed off look, the glasses guy that still has the sharp glint, and a pale girl with a blood-red colour hair and... Persia.

Well, it's not like Kuroyuki's team is better than me though.

Her team has the emotionless string girl and the four guys that was jealous of me earlier when Kuroyuki's crushing my head. ...Do they really like to die?

Both of our teams were separated to the sides of the training room for us to discuss our strategies. Personally, I think it's pointless.

But anyways, I need to know a few more students here other than Kuroyuki and Persia. Otherwise, my school life would be lonely...

Since I'm the leader, I need to take lead and introduce myself. Come to think of it, it's my first time attending class... but I can't feel anything related to nervousness.

"My name is Lucifer Nightwalker von Nightmare, nice to meet you."

The moment I stated my name 'Lucifer', I noticed that the sword guy, the fire hair dude and the glasses guy inadvertently widen their eyes, staring at me.

"What is it? Did I say something wrong?" I asked as I look at them.

"It's nothing~ How about the next person please~?"

Seeming to have returned back to her normal state, Persia helped me to guide them.

"Hah... My name is August Whisperwind, A human. I'm Ranked Fifth and my codename is <Sword Saint>. Better remember clearly you bastard." At his last sentence, he looks at me with a glare.

Huh... that's a little detailed. Is there a rule saying that one must tell their rank and codename?

...He's still annoying as ever, looking at me with 'you sword stealing bastard' face...

"Yeah, right. Sword hooligan." I ignored his glare and gave him my own created nickname.

"OI." Yeah right, he's irritated from my remark.

When my eyes met the flame-hair guy's eyes, he gives me a pissed-off look and clicked his tongue. What a strange person...

"Err... Blaze...? It's your turn..."

When Persia talks to Blaze, she seemed scared. Is it because of his pissed-off face?

"...Tch. Crimson Veludora Blaze. Hybrid. Ranked Third and codename <Raged Flames>."

As he said, he glared at Persia fiercely. But since Persia hid at my back, I'm the one accepting those glare instead. Comparing to Kuroyuki's glare, this is totally nothing.

What sort of hybrid is he...? Doesn't seem like any of it. Did he camouflaged himself with magic?

"You aren't human?" I asked, with a dumbfounded look.

Because no matter how you look he's definitely a human.

"...a half dragon, half phoenix." He muttered with an irritated look.

Eh... Dragon...?

No wonder he's so prideful. But why did he came all the way here and camouflage himself into a human with magic...?

I shouldn't ask. Or else he's going to click his tongue again.

Now then... who's next—

"My name's Persia. Surely you know that I'm the Student Council President already. I'm a human and Ranked Fourth. My codename is <Flash Goddess> and by the way, I enjoy working with you~"

As Persia introduced herself to me, she smiled cutely. Come to think of it, she smiles to me every time she talks. She likes me or something...?

She purposely hid her family name. I guess she doesn't want us to remember her as a noble.

".....Yeah. I knew that already." I said.

"You shouldn't be that rude towards a girl you know?"

She's sulking with a little pink on her cheeks. It's cute. But acting cute all the time makes me want to hit her.

"This is casual. Not rude. Besides, you liked it when I'm being casual with you." I retorted while letting out a sigh.

"Eh~ you shouldn't say it out so loud~" She looks away shyly. But it's clearly an act.

I wonder why, an irresistible urge on hitting her forehead with a knife-hand is starting to build up. Stay calm, Lucifer... You must endure that urge...

"...Next." I said. Looking towards the guy with the glasses.

"Name: Kronos Y Chronoclock. Ranked Seventh. Codename <Weapon Supporter>."

He murmured as he nudges his glasses with a sharp glint on his eyes.

Did I actually imagined symbols from his words...? What are you...? A computer?

“...That’s an interesting way of introducing yourself. Oh and, do you have dual swords to lend me...?” I asked.

With a clockwise turn on his right hand, he opened a grey magic circle that’s rotating on his palm. It seems he can use storage magic.

“Here— shit! My magic’s gone lose.” He cried.

With my outstanding reflexes, I quickly extended my hand and change the direction of Kronos’s hand, but it pointed just right towards the sword hooligan.

The magic circle expanded suddenly, with a large amount of weapons flying out towards me. Swords, spears, arrows, scythes, staffs, daggers, axes, gauntlets, claws, knives, clubs, javelins, throwing blades, chains, whips, shields, and etc....

“WHAT THE!!?”

The sword hooligan August, who is unlucky— ended up burying inside the mass of weapons.

“Sorry.” Kronos apologizes, but he doesn’t look sorry at all.

I searched through the pile of weapons and finally founded... dual swords.

“THE HELL! CAN’T YOU AT LEAST GET ME OUT OF HERE!?” The sword hooligan yelled within the pile of weapons. He seems to be fine beneath there.

The others doesn’t seemed to be care by this, as if they know that he’d be fine.

Kronos extended his hand towards the pile of weapons and turned his hand anti-clockwise. With a shining light, the weapons disappeared, except the dual swords I’m holding.

The sword hooligan is laid flat on the ground, with his soul that seems to be gone.

Huh... Not even a scratch on his clothes...?

Leaving the sword hooligan aside, I walked back to the centre of the group and stared at the last member— a pale vampire girl with a pair of wings on her back.

“Uh... Err... My name is Sherry BloodRose Vampir. I’m Ranked Eleventh. My codename is <Sonic Vampire>...” Her cheeks flushed in red, what happened...?

By the way, I really liked the blood-red colour of her hair and her eyes. It’s said to be the most beautiful red colour among vampires. If she wears a red dress, then I’m sure she’d look stunning. Well... of course it wouldn’t be better than Kuroyuki though.

“You blood-red colour looked really beautiful.” I said.

Her face gone really red out of embarrassment. It’s not wrong to say a girl was beautiful though.

“...I-I’m cute...”



She whispered very quietly, seeming to be very happy as she place her hands on her cheeks. But really... I can totally hear her there...

"What about me?" Persia sulked.

"You aren't beautiful at all." I said with a smirk.

"Ugh....." She's on the verge of tears. Do you really need to be that dramatic?

"...But you are cute and pretty." I continued, to prevent her from actually crying.

"Oh, thanks a bunch~" She returned to normal in an instant. Her emotions sure change fast.

Their introduction ended. Now I need to think up of a strategy...

"...Hmm. How do you guys fight...?" I asked.

Each and every person have a unique way of fighting. Understanding how they fight might be able to help me to give them their perfect organized task.

All of them here fought Kuroyuki at least once. Yeah, I watched Kuroyuki's duel video with the other students and all of them are ended up in the infirmary.

"Ugh... ..Swordsmanship."

Whoa? When did the sword hooligan sit beside me?

The sword hooligan was the first to speak. And clearly he's speaking nonsense. It's obvious that he's a close combat type that only relies on swordsmanship. Exactly the same as what I saw in the video.

"Yeah, it's obvious because your weapon is a sword. Are you an idiot or something?" I said.

"You bastard. Is that how you treat your teammate in the first place?"

The sword hooligan glares at me, displeased and annoyed. I ignored him and looked at the person who's glaring at me— Blaze.

"What about you Blaze?"

As I questioned Blaze, he broke his eye contact with me and looked annoyed.

"...Tch. Martial arts." He uttered.

...I hate his attitude. Are you really trying to die here you foolish dragon?

Since Blaze refuses to speak another word, I continued to Sherry. Her cheeks flushed in pink when our eyes met. Perhaps I shouldn't have said she's beautiful, I'm giving trouble to myself.

"So how do you fight, Sherry?"

"Um... I create shockwaves with my guitar..." She said, while taking out her electric guitar.

With mainly red in colour, it was decorated by black colour lines and black guitar strings. In other words, it looks cool.

She's a vampire, but yet there are several types of vampires— separated into four types.

The first type, has wings on its back. Able to travel in both day and night but they are no different than humans except for their sharper fangs and their wings.

The second type, doesn't have wings and their faces looks slightly pale. Given with high magic affinity, but they can only travel during the night.

The third type, is wingless but yet it was known as the strongest among the vampires as they are immortal and they are very rare. They can travel in both day and night and having high magic affinity.

The forth type was a mixture of the first and second type. It has wings, high magic affinity and they are able to travel in both day and night. It was said that they are the new generations of vampires.

Except the third type, the others needed to drink blood to survive. Any type of blood will do.

From what I can tell, Sherry is the forth type. I can sense the strong magic aura and mana flow from her...

"I see. It's interesting..." I murmured softly.

Sherry looks happy. I'm not really praising you so please stop with the innocent smile...

Persia's jealous for some reason— because she's looking at me with a sulking look. For whatever reason that is, I couldn't care about that.

...If I remember correctly, the card she flings earlier must be her weapon.

"So... Persia your weapon are cards...?" I asked her.

"Un! I cut them with my cards~"

She looks happy when it's her turn. She demonstrate her card throwing skills in front of me— if it's isn't for my outstanding evasion I would have been hit by her card just now.

...Not good.

I ignored her, and stare at Kronos, who doesn't seem to be interested in this battle at all.

"Kronos...?" Persia swings her hand in front of Kronos.

"Firing my weapons then pick up anything in sight and attack."

He mumbled, with his fingers is nudging his glasses again with a glint on his eyes.

.....Is he an idiot? Opening his storage magic circle and shoots out his weapons...? It can't really shoot that far and it's basically giving out his weapons to his enemies... some 'supporter' you are...

“That’s stupid. What if they destroy or steal your weapons...?” I questioned him.

“Err.....”

He’s stuck. His brain ceased to function faster than I expected. What should I do...?

...Damn. This is harder than I thought. All of them seemed really weak...!

Do I have another option...?

This academy is famous for having the most elemental users enrolled. Furthermore, S class is considered as the top classes, there should be at least one of them is an elemental user.

“Do you guys possess elemental power?” I asked, while scanning them.

“I’m the wind type.” Huh...?! The sword hooligan is an elemental user!?

“Cheh... Fire.” The foolish half-dragon is a fire type...? But isn’t he’s able to spit fire from his mouth already?

“Earth.” Oh, he’s back... So August is the earth type— that explains the insane amount weapons he has.

“I’m light~” Persia is the light elemental type... But I thought she uses magic to fight.

“I’m not an elemental user...” Sherry isn’t one. How useless— the same as me.

I’m lucky...! There are four elemental users in my group! But why... their difference in power has such a huge gap compared to Kuroyuki...?

...What about magic? Do they know how to cast or enchant offensive magic...?

“Anyone knows how to use magic?” I asked.

“I don’t know how to use magic.” Sword hooligan out.

“...Human transforming magic.” Stupid dragon’s magic is useless.

“Storage magic.” Kronos’s magic might be useful— for travelling, not battling.

“I don’t know how to use magic, sorry~” Hello, Persia? What are you doing? Don’t just go and make that cute face while lying.

“I don’t know...” Sherry please don’t be that depressed... it’s a waste on her strong magic affinity though.

...They don’t know how to cast offensive magic at all (even though Persia is lying)... but neither am I.

“...What are the other four student’s powers on Kuroyuki’s group?”

Analysing and understanding your opponent is also another way close for victory. Know your enemies well, and you win in every war.

Seeming to have popped an idea in her brain, Persia quickly opens a screen— it displays the student's data. That's cheating because only the student council president possess these information. I like it.

"Martin's ability was... martial arts of eight trigrams or something like that. Jean was a lightning elemental user that focus on long range attacks with a gun. While... Sores uses spears. Since he's one of Kuroyuki's fans." Persia blabbered.

...What a scary person, using the same weapon as Kuroyuki. I'm sure Kuroyuki would find it annoying and irritated with them in the same group with her.

"He confessed to Kuroyuki sixty-seven times already, getting freeze out before he can even speak and he was sent to the infirmary every time for two weeks at worst—" She continue her blabber.

"These information are useless..." I looked at Persia with a blank expression.

"...And I don't want to mention the last person who confessed to her more than a hundred times."

...Nice job, Persia. You finally understand.

Placing my fingers under my chin, I started to plan a strategy that was pointless in either way.

After thinking for a few seconds, I got the solution.

"Blaze and Sherry, both of you will be scouts. Since both of you can fly, it will be easier to go and return. But be careful from Heartlock's strings and Kuroyuki's ice." I said.

The reason I didn't count those other four in it's because... you will know later.

"Got it." "Tch, whatever."

I liked Sherry's obedient answer, and my nerves twitched when that stupid half-dragon clicked his tongue with a pissed-off face again.

"Kronos, once I give you the signal then you shall fire your weapons, got it?" I looked at Kronos, who's head seems to be spacing out all the time.

"Signal?" He questioned.

Hmm... it's quite unexpected of his sharpness. Straight to the point, eh?

"Shoot it." I said, with a sparkle in my eyes.

"...Got it." As he nudged his glasses while saying this, a part of his body language is saying it's really lame.

Lame or not, I ignored him and looked at Persia, who's smiling at me with a sweet look.

"Well then, Persia you shall lay traps as well. Once I give you the signal, throw all your cards." I said.

"But I can only throw eight cards in one time at most..."

"Then continue to throw it by then. Remember to keep some of them for spare to protect yourself."

"Roger that~! What's the signal anyway~?" She asked, with an innocently dumbfounded look.

"Light it up." I replied.

".....sounds lame." She let out a sigh. How blunt of you.

"Because it's lame so then you will remember." I retorted.

"Oh~"

"Oi. What about me?"

Seeming to have patiently waited for quite some time, the sword hooligan can't hold back his urge and decided to ask me.

I did that on purpose.

"You shall be in the front lines with me. Both of us will be the ones provoking them." I replied.

"Hmm..... that's fair enough."

He seems pleased to hear that. I guess he knew that he was annoying.

"Alright then...! Here's the last question."

"Eh? What is it~?" Persia looks motivated. That's good.

Before a fight, to make sure that your members has a strong motivation to win, a simple question must be asked to boost their motivation.

"Do you guys think you can win?"

"Impossible." "Like hell." "Nope." "No way." "No..."

.....What a straight answer. Screw that. What was all of that preparation about in the end!?

"I don't care!! All of you just do your own part well! Just follow my instructions then it'd be fine." I uttered.

"...I don't think so." Persia sounded her own opinion and she looks serious about this.

"Huh? Why is that Persia?" I questioned her.

"Not even all of the students of S class can even land a scratch on Kuroyuki." She muttered, with an 'I gave up on everything already!' look.

.....That perfect girl is way too strong.

“But you have me! I`m Ranked First you know?” I boasted.

“.....Oh.”

...Persia looks gloomy, she`s totally not convinced.

“WHY DO YOU LOOK SO DISAPPOINTED?” I yelled at her.

“...Nothing...” Her voice is so empty.

Ah. Time`s up already...? Oh well.

“Anyways, our match is going to start in 15 seconds. So do your best!” I cheered.

“.....Oh.”

I give up. The atmosphere is too lifeless. I should surrender right from the start then?

But that damn old principal is watching!!! If I failed to please him, then it`d be hell for me...!

“You S class brats, give everything you got! At least land a single hit on the special student this time! I don`t want to witness another serving of utter defeat by the special student!” The principal yelled with a vexed expression.

He was referring to Kuroyuki— because his finger is pointing at her and only her.

...I really hate that principal. He ignores my existence completely.

The principal opened a screen that displays the settings of the artificial dimension.

“You brats have exactly one minute to prepare your positions! Understood?” He said.

After a press of ‘DONE’ on his screen, the entire training room changes it`s scenery, as if it`s transporting us to another place.

...A blue sky.

Fluffy clouds hanging, moving slowly from the gentle breeze of the wind.

Fresh green grasses and dancing flowers, shining from the radiation of the sunlight.

The air smells good.

Oh... The boundary seems limitless, because I can`t see Kuroyuki`s team anywhere.

Sigh... I don`t have the mood to fight in such a relaxing place...

2-6

So, so, so cold...!

The relaxing atmosphere is completely gone...! My mood to fight has left completely...!

At the start, everything was nice.

Afterwards, snow and ice from the opposite slowly eats away our surroundings. The grass was filled with snow, the air turns cold... the clouds turned humid and dense, it even snowed.

Everything— It's completely... winter.

"T-This is K-Kuroyuki's frozen world..."

Persia, that's standing beside me mumbled with a shivering voice.

"I see... So she froze the entire dimension..." I muttered in response.

This is not good— or rather, a complete disadvantage for me. All of us are perhaps inside Kuroyuki's range already.

"Can you guys even fight at this rate...?" I asked, while observing their reactions.

"O-Of c-c-c-course...! W-Who do y-y-you t-think I am...?"

The sword hooligan muttered with his hands rubbing his body as he shivered like crazy.

...Everyone is shivering from the cold— except for me and the foolish dragon.

"P-P-Please don't move....! I-It's s-so cold...!"

Persia gave up from the cold and started to stick herself on my body— whoa, girls are soft.

"Ehehe~ so warm..." She smiled happily.

"E-E-Excuse me...!" Sherry decided to grab my other arm— girls are so soft...

If there's an option, they will never choose me. It's because the foolish dragon had a pissed off look, the sword hooligan is shivering and Kronos already had the string girl.

I don't really feel cold in winter... perhaps it's because of my training, I'm practically immune to extreme temperature change. But despite that, I still can't withstand Kuroyuki's ice.

"...Alright. Everyone have their microphones on right?"

Nobody responded. Everyone was too cold to answer me except the foolish dragon, but he choose to ignore me.

"Alright, move out!" I said.

Using partial transformation magic, the dragon releases his wings.

...Beautiful.

His wings are beautiful. Like feathers and furs, cloaked with various colour of flames burning.

His wings are so big, and that's some heat he's giving off...! The snow melted in an instant...!

...Is his uniform fire resistant...? It's not burning at all...

With a flap of their wings, both of them flew to the sky and disappeared.

...Ah. I wish I have wings.

"Well then, follow me." I said.

The four of us walked as I swiped my finger and opened a window— displaying a map. It's a setting to find the location of the enemies through your ally's nearby whereabouts.

They sure fly fast, soaring over 400m already in just 24 seconds.

Kuroyuki... and the string girl showed up on the screen. Where are the others...?

".....!" The ground— no, the snow are shaking.

"AH!!! IT'S THE SNOW TSUNAMI!!!"

As the pile of snow hurled up towards us and at least 5m in height, Persia shriek out in confusion and she quickly jumped backwards in a god-like speed— like a flash, avoiding from the snow tsunami.

What speed and swiftness...!

"First Dimensional Single Sword Skill— Silent Blade."

I took a leap and blasted a hole on the middle of the snow. It soon shatters and crumbles.

...It seems that the sword can't hold for another several swings.

Whoa!? What's with this softness— when did she return to my arm!?

"G-G-Good job... So warm..." Persia shivered.

...How can they even fight at this rate? The sword hooligan and Kronos are shivering too much to react to the snow.

I opened and looked at the map.

The pointers of Kuroyuki and the string girl are approaching to us at a fast speed. It seems they are chasing Blaze and Sherry that's coming back towards us— that I planned.



But there's some abnormality here... Where are the other four guys of her team? More or less, I know what's going on since the start.

"Persia, stay behind my back will ya? And come forward, hooligan."

As Persia stayed behind, I turned my head back— looking at the shivering sword hooligan.

"S-S-Stop calling me h-hooligan...!" He is barely mustering his strength to speak.

...Seriously, how can they even fight? I can't see any hope here.

The moment I hear the sound of footsteps of the snow in front of me, I turned my head back.

"Ah... this is bad." I murmured.

It's Kuroyuki... and the string girl. I guess the dragon and Sherry are still somewhere above us.

"...Hello." As she stopped, Kuroyuki gave a little wave on her hand, followed by a cold smile.

".....where are the others...?"

I asked her with a questioning gaze, while thinking what might possibly left of the other four of her members.

"...They are frozen." Somehow, Kuroyuki's expression looks somewhat irritated.

"Really...? At a time like this, they confessed to you?"

Kuroyuki had a slight pause.

"...Yes." She uttered.

Persia, who is hiding behind my back jerked my clothes. As I turned back and look at her, she's making a 'You see? I told you so' face. But clearly, I never said that I don't believe her at all though.

"C-Can we start this a-already...! It's so freaking c-c-cold...!"

The sword hooligan, who is standing beside me while shivering in cold, mumbles as if it's his last breath.

"By the way... aren't you outnumbered?" I said to Kuroyuki.

"...I'm not." After she gave a small huff, she looked at me with an 'are you an idiot?' face.

"Huh?"

"...It's you." She gave me a serious gaze.

"...Shit. I forgot."

Kronos, who remained silent up until now, speaks in a tremulous tone.

“...what is it...?” I asked.

“Rumelia has an advantage in fighting against opponents on a large field!”

As he yelled, he`s trembling so much— his hands are shaking as he nudges his glasses. By the way, who is Rumelia?

“...Oh.” As I saw what`s in front of me, my body stopped moving.

What`s in front of me, are countless magic circles on mid-air.

One by one, metal puppets crawls out from every single one of it, pulled by strings.

The number of the puppets she pulled out, was somewhere around a hundred. But— even against Kuroyuki, she pulled out five at most...

Could it be... that their strategy is really that simple!?

“Kronos, you want to die? You aren`t supposed to help them, but me.” The string girl said, but yet she`s not showing any killing intents at all, as emotionless as ever.

Huh, so she`s Rumelia. That said, her name is Rumelia Heartlock...?

“No, wait Rumelia...! It`s because we are childhood friends, so I need to help you grew stronger by helping them...!” Kronos retorted.

“What nonsense are you spouting? It`s seems I will have to silence you.”

I agree with Rumelia. Kronos, her childhood friend, isn`t making any sense at all.

Eh...?

“Huh?! You and Rumelia are childhood friends? Surely you know her weakness...!” As I said, I turn my head towards Kronos.

“Of course I do! Just defeat her and all the puppets will stop moving...!” He said in a strong tone.

So their strategy is to let Rumelia`s puppets to deal with us and Kuroyuki to defend her. Is this even a strategy...? I mean... the outcome is obvious.

“I will deal with Kuroyuki. Now light it up and shoot it!” I yelled, while readying myself in a fighting stance.

.....

After three whole seconds, I stood there. There`s nothing but a dreadful silence. Everyone here is looking at me with a strange expression. This hellish atmosphere is killing me. No wait, I shouldn`t be rash, let`s wait for a few more seconds...

.....

“WHAT THE HELL ARE YOU TWO DOING!!!!!!?” I shouted to Persia and Kronos, while glaring at them, fiercely.

“Huh?” “What?”

But both of them are totally confused. Their faces are clearly telling they don't understand a single thing that I'm saying.

“I SAID LIGHT IT UP AND SHOOT IT!!!”

“...What's that?” “Don't understand.”

These fools...!

“THE DAMN SIGNAL DAMN IT!!!”

““Oh.....””

“...Frozen Chamber.”

As the two of them are trying to redo everything, Kuroyuki realized our plan and extended her hand with the special three-finger posture, freezing all of us.

Due to the distraction by the two of them, I ended up frozen inside her ice too.

“(Ow,ow,ow so cold!)”

Enduring from the throbbing pain of my body from her ice, I broke free using my raw strength.

“...Pierce.” Kuroyuki whispered.

As the moment I get a clear view what's in front of me, several ice spear shoots towards me.

Kuroyuki knew that I'm able to break free from her ice, she's prepared to attack.

My body instincts quickly dodged the spear that was aiming on my right shoulder, abdomen, waist, left chest, stomach, and left leg.

“Indeed a special student after all.” Rumelia said in a monotone voice.

As those words came across my ears, seven puppets came to me with their swords made from Kuroyuki's ice.

It was Rumelia. That speed's too fast for a puppet master.

I quickly evaded the first and second attack that forms a cross, and gave the puppets several round horse kicks.

Even though it's made by metal, but my strength was so strong that the puppets splits to half or blasted a hole on the middle.

Normally one would have been in shock, but Rumelia isn't show any emotions at all.

"Whoa, whoops, there...!"

After dodging Kuroyuki's spears, I approached to Persia and freed her using a simple turning kick that I held back my strength. Then I freed Kronos and the sword hooligan by throwing the dual swords towards them, with the hilt hitting the ice and breaking them.

"KYAA!!?" "WAHHH!!?" "Hoh... So cold..."

The three of them sounded pathetic. Their expression seems to be in state of shock. But yet... it seems like an act.

As I expected, they are so annoying...! It's time for my backup plan— direct assault!

"YOU FOOLS!!! JUST ATTACK WITH ALL YOU GOT!!!" I yelled after I pick back the dual swords.

Suddenly, three large orange fireballs rained down from the sky, aiming for Kuroyuki and Rumelia.

Kuroyuki and Rumelia remains calm and looks at the fireballs like it was nothing. Soon, Kuroyuki extended her hand towards the fireballs.

"...Freeze."

After her whisper, the fireballs evaporated instantly with a 'Hiss' sound.

It's the foolish dragon. But why now did he decide to make a move...?

He descended from the sky with a large orange flame gathered on her right fist, aiming for Kuroyuki.

"...Snow—"

"I won't let you...!"

As Kuroyuki is going to freeze him, I quickly approach towards Kuroyuki with my only footwork— silent step, and rammed the dual sword with all the strength I have in my current state.

Kuroyuki calmly meet my assault, blocking my attack with an ice Excalibur that she forged.

I quickly retract the dual sword and gave a spinning kick to knock away her Excalibur. Using the momentum, I swung the dual swords in a horizontal line on her waist.

CLANG!

Ah. The dual sword shattered to pieces.

What a useless piece of crap...

Kuroyuki's invisible armour is too hard and the sword is too crappy.

"Whoa, how dangerous." I stepped backwards to evade Kuroyuki's spear.

Kuroyuki looks up with a cold gaze and reached out her hand once more.

“...Snow hurricane.” She whispered.

Snow and ice hurls in a circular fast speed, overwhelming the dragon’s flames and kept him frozen in a large ice crystal.

He smacks into the pile of snow pathetically. It seems to me that he fainted. He’s not melting the ice with his flames at all.

The other three couldn’t care less about him, they continued to struggle themselves from Rumelia’s puppets.

Throwing away the broken swords, I took a leap forth.

“First Dimensional Punching Skill— Silent Punch.”

Similar to the sword skill silent blade, I dash in a high speed and aimed for Kuroyuki’s abdomen.

Kuroyuki blocked my fist perfectly with her Excalibur, but her Excalibur cracked.

Ow...! It hurts... Her ice is too hard...! Ow, my fist was coated in ice...?

Kuroyuki forged a single-edge ice sword and disappeared.

“...Sword Dance.”

I dodged her three stabbing attacks on my shoulder, chest, and stomach. Then parried off her vertical slash with my palm and warded off her sword swings with my hand.

She squad down and gave a double low spinning kick, I evade it by stepping back two times.

Kuroyuki forged a spear and stab straight towards my stomach.

“Second Dimensional Chopping Skill— Cross Slice!”

With the first horizontal chop, I broke the spear head. I knocked away her sword with the second vertical chop.

“(Argh...! It hurts so much...!)” I hold the pain.

I grabbed both of her hands, and my hands are coated with ice, linking our hands together.

“...What are you trying to do...?” Kuroyuki glares at me fiercely, releasing an awful amount of killing intent.

.....Just ignore her eyes and continue my plan.

“Sherry!!!”

I yelled to Sherry, who is still waiting in the sky. Earlier before her flight, I secretly told her to wait for my signal while I kept Kuroyuki and Rumelia occupied.

"...How foolish. You knew I can freeze her with just a gaze." Kuroyuki said.

"Of course, so please don't kill me by then." I replied as I smirked.

"...Eh...?"

I swing my hands and broke free from her ice. Then, I hugged her.

So indescribably soft... even plenty more than my little sis or even my magical pet.

I hope she wouldn't count this as sexual harassment, since she's totally in shock right now.

"Ultrasonic Wave!"

Sherry plays a string of her guitar, bursting a large sound wave roaring towards Rumelia that's busying controlling her puppets.

"....."

Rumelia doesn't have the slightest change in expression as the strong wave that hits her. I knew it, it's not effective—

THUD.

.....So suddenly, she collapsed on the snow. Her puppets stopped moving.

Oh no.

"GRKK!!!?" I shrieked.

Her speed increased...!?

Kuroyuki gave me a turning kick on my waist, but yet it's speed and power increased to the level that's nearly on par with her grip.

Since I knew I can't dodge it, I soften the impact with both of my palms on my left. But even so, it's still powerful enough to send me flying.

Reluctantly, during my mid-air flight, I divert the force downwards by bending and twisting my body to get a safe landing and preventing myself from flying too far away.

I'm supposed to pursue her... but I can't. It's... too late.

".....Ice Age." She said.

After a brilliant light that shines blindly white, Kuroyuki's surrounding are dressed in nothing but white coated ice and snow above the snow.

By the way, her surrounding— means us are included, are trapped inside an ice crystal.

Kuh...! So cold...!

Forcefully mustering strength through every inch of my body, I broke free from the ice crystal.

Her ice is even harder this time. Not good at all. Is she the type to grow stronger in fights as time passes...?

“...you despicable PERVERT...!” Kuroyuki uttered with a very displeased look.

As she forge a spear on her right hand, the snow on the ground slowly floats upwards— camouflaging her presence.

“Whoa!?”

Kuroyuki suddenly appeared in front of me, thrusting her spear forth. I quickly skid towards her right to evade it, but yet—

“...Burst.” She whispered.

“BUWAHH!?”

The spear head exploded with a large impact.

As the snow and mist from the explosion covers her sight completely, I quickly leap backwards to increase our distance.

...My right arm... It`s all stiff from her ice...!

As expected, she uses her head well. Even if I managed to avoid from her slash and cuts, an explosion right next to me is more than enough to make me occupied.

What`s more, she`s totally immune from her own power, the explosion is just right in front of her but yet she`s unscathed.

...She`s getting serious. This is bad, I can`t survive this—

“WAH!!?”

I manage to evade seven spears that grazed my head, shoulder and waist the moment I managed to get a footing.

“...it won`t miss next time.”

Kuroyuki`s definitely angry of me. Her eyes are telling me ‘you sure have guts to sexual harass me, eh?’

At this rate, I can`t stop her at all. I need to deal with this sure win technique...!

“I`m sorry please forgive me...!”

Kneel down and beg for forgiveness— CRACK!

“ARGHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHH!!!??”

“...perverts shall not be forgiven even till their deaths...” She utters in a cold voice.

What's with this insane speed...?! My skull...! My skull...! I can hear the cracking sound...!

I slap away her hand several times and managed to escape from her demon's grip. As soon as I manage to keep some distance, she chase and pursues me with endless spears that constantly shoots at me.

"I'm really sorry!! Can't you forgive me already?!" I cried to her, while dodging some spears with a small leap.

“...NEVER.” She said.

As soon as she lifted her fingers, snow hurls up and snowflakes gathered in my direction, icicles shoots up from the ground and hail rained down from the sky.

I have no choice...! It's risky, but worth a try...!

## Silent Step...!

I approached in front of her and placed my hand on her head.

"I'm really sorry...!" I said, with an apologized look.

“...what are you doing?” Kuroyuki mutters with a cold voice that’s enough to freeze my heart.

But I can't lose to this...!

"Begging for forgiveness." I said, while ready to guard against her attack.

“...Fine.” Kuroyuki pouted, while looking a little shy.

It worked...!? That scared the shit out of me...!

I didn't expect it would work so well by patting her head. I thought this technique only works on the two little girls at my home.

...This is the first time I have subdued myself to another girl aside from those two little girls.

“Anyways, I need a little favour...”

I told Kuroyuki to only defend the attacks from the current remaining members that's still conscious.

And so, I took my time and walk towards the sword hooligan and the others. Then I break the ice crystals with my kicks.

""""SOOOOOOOO COLD!!!""""



Among the five of them, Sherry's the only one who was out cold. The sword hooligan, Persia, Kronos and the foolish dragon are still conscious despite being frozen inside in Kuroyuki's cold ice crystal for a certain time.

From their looks, it seems they didn't know what I'm trying to figure out from them.

While they continue to shiver in cold, I gave them their orders.

"Hold out Kuroyuki for a while, I need to come out with a plan...!"

"WHOA!?" "KYAA!?" "WAH!?" "TCH...!"

As many spears shoots towards our direction, all five of us managed to move away from the targeted spots.

After being frozen for that long, aren't their bodies supposed to be stiff...? They move pretty well.

"I-It's impossible...!"

Persia looks freaked out and shivers in cold.

"Just do it."

After my word, the sword hooligan quickly dash towards Kuroyuki.

His movement seems familiar...

"Scattering Dandelion." He whispered.

Kuroyuki's sword technique...? No, it's even better, his movements are even swifter than hers.

After blocking a few attacks with her sword, Kuroyuki increased her distance and she forged a spear.

"...Frozen spear strike."

"Whoa!?"

Thrusting her spear in a god-like speed, a cold gust of air burst violently. The sword hooligan quickly escape from his tight position by jumping away.

"Burn!"

The stupid dragon formed a large fireball on his fist and charge forward.

"...Freeze."

Same as last time, the fire was put out immediately. Kuroyuki's power was too overwhelming, the dragon has no chance.

He decided to rely on martial arts. But after a straight punch, Kuroyuki sent him flying by giving him a kick on his chest.

Yeah right, her strength is stronger than my current level.

“Item Storage: Release...!”

Kronos opens several magic circles and shoots his weapons towards Kuroyuki. But it’s totally useless, Kuroyuki’s armour is too hard to penetrate.

After that, Kronos runs and picks up a scythe from the ground.

“Reinforced weapon: Slice!”

Quite unexpected, Kronos’s quite skilled. That one swing he did is enough to crack Kuroyuki’s ice sword.

“...Pierce.”

“This is bad...” Kronos said.

Kuroyuki momentarily shoots her spears towards Kronos, giving him a hard time to attack.

CRACK!

A card hits Kuroyuki’s shoulder but it bounced off. It was Persia’s doing. Kuroyuki wasn’t bothered by it the slightest bit.

The three guys continuously launch their attacks. Kuroyuki’s skilfully defended them all.

The shivering Persia gave up and grabs my left arm.

“S-See...? It’s impossible...” She said, in a shivering voice.

Is Persia trying to convince me...?

But after all of that observation, I have a plan.

2-7

"My team surrenders!" I yelled.

""""Huh?"""" "...Eh?"

As expected, all of them are confused. Despite there's an overwhelming advantage of 5 VS 1, but yet I chose to surrender.

"MATCH ENDS. KUROYUKI SHIROHA'S TEAM WINS."

After the system announces, the scenery changes back to the training room. The ice and snow disappeared as well, leaving Kronos's weapons on the ground as he stored it back.

As everything changes back, there's a few extra people waiting. It's the workers.

"You know what to do." The principal said to the workers.

The workers walks towards the fainted students and carries them with several portable floating bed.

Sherry and the four guys from Kuroyuki's team is being carried to the infirmary.

When a worker is about to take Rumelia Heartlock to the infirmary...

"Ah, there's no need."

I stopped him to bring Rumelia away.

"What are you doing?" Kronos placed his hand on my shoulder.

As I turn my head back and look at him, he gave me a serious look. As expected from her childhood friend, but do you really think I'm going to sexual harass her...?

Not just Kronos, everyone in this room have their attention all on me.

"Don't worry about it, she's fine."

I poked her face continuously several times until she wakes up.

"Nn... What are you doing?"

Rumelia emotionlessly questioned me. I noticed her hand is preparing to tie me up with her strings, but yet her face doesn't show any sign of it.

"Oh? You looked cute— ARGHH!!!!?"

When did you approach behind me...?!

Kuroyuki is gripping my head from behind, she isn't very fond with my actions and answers.

"...what are you doing...?" She uttered.

She seems jealous.

"OW!!!!? I`M JUST MAKING SURE THAT SHE WAKES UP!!"

“Alright, alright. Settle down already you brats.”

The principal claps his hands to direct the student's attention to him.

“In the last few years, the Imperial Knights Academy’s ranking in the <Knight’s Tournament> has been staying bottom rank. I sent an executive member to invite someone capable in improving the results. And here he is.....?”

As the principal point his hand towards me, he looks surprised and awkward. Since Kuroyuki was still gripping my head, I couldn't care less about it.

"Erm... Kuroyuki you can let go now. At this rate, that brat is going to die."

My head is bleeding intensely. Thank goodness she finally release her hand.

Pretending that nothing happened, I slowly walks to the principal. Due to the blood loss earlier, my footsteps totter left and right as I walk.

Even though my head is still bleeding, but I coughed to brush it off.

“Ehem. I received an email from the principal this morning during my way here, the contents was to observe the battle and find a way to improve it.” I said.

Every student were surprised, except for Kuroyuki.

Based on the battle earlier, the students from S class clearly are much weaker than the special students. That to be said, they need to improve till at least they are able to win Kuroyuki in a 10 VS 1 fight.

“However, there`s no need for that at all.”

“““““““HUH!?”””””””””””

Well I expected this, everyone was shocked and confused. Especially the principal, giving me a look that said, 'Do you want to get expelled, brat?' At least he should hear my reasoning first.

“August Whisperwind, Kronos Y Chronoclock, Crimson Veludora Blaze, Persia Silverlight and Rumelia Heartlock actually has the power that’s near to a special student like Kuroyuki.”

Four of them looks surprised except Rumelia. She`s emotionless, how scary.

“Haha, stop joking.”

The sword hooligan denied, seeming calm as he let out a smirk.

Huh... His personality changed back to normal.

Why do they even bother to deny it? From the mock battle, I confirmed that their level is more than enough to crush me several times.

Although I knew one of the reasons they hid it, but still— I need to do my job here. The principal is watching.

“August, from whom do you learn your swordsmanship from?” I asked.

“It’s not important.”

He confidently hide his background away. But it makes it better if he did do so. Everything will go as what I say so.

“Based on my judgement, seems to me you are a swordsmanship genius that comes once in a thousand years. Even though you are hiding the fact about it but I’m still able to see it from you.”

Hearing my statement, August visibly flinched.

“Oi, oi. What makes you say that?”

The words that escaped from him is starting to bulk up.

“Earlier from the battle, you used the sword skill same as Kuroyuki.” I said.

“It’s just similar.”

“Yes it is, but yet why is it similar?”

“Just a coincidence.”

“Perhaps so. Do you remember what did you said during the first time we met?”

“You are weak.” He said.

.....Huh?

When did he say this...? No, did he? It can’t be my mistake...

“Ah, sorry. My bad, I’m not really sure.” He continued.

“When you lend me your sword, you said ‘I’m here to steal sword techniques anyways’, didn’t you?”

“Oh. That, huh? I’m just curious.” He folded his arms, looking at me with a puzzled look.

“You intend to copy my swordsmanship too don’t you?” I said with a carefree smile.

“Why would I copy your half-assed swordsmanship for?”

As he said, he’s filled with disappointment— only towards my swordsmanship, though.

“How do you know it’s half-assed? I never told anyone that my swordsmanship is not complete.”

He flinched again the moment he heard my statement.

"Besides, I'm a special student. It's pretty obvious that no one would have believed that I used such 'half-assed' swordsmanship to defeat Kuroyuki in her duel."

"It's because you defeated the <Winter Princess> by luck."

"...don't simply run your mouth." I whispered to him.

I gave a signal to the sword hooligan telling him to look at the furious Kuroyuki that's having a face that said '...By luck? Do you want to die?'

Seeing that, the sword hooligan broke into cold sweat.

"Ah, there's one more thing. The sword that you have, it can change into any sword in your favour, it's pretty handy when it comes to copy others swordsmanship using the same blade as them."

"Okay, okay. You got me."

He finally admit it. Given the facts that I have stated clearly, there's no room to deny it.

The principal and Kuroyuki looks amazed and unbelievable upon my clear judgement.

Let's take this faster, I'm getting tired with all that talking.

I took out the hilts of the broken swords from my pocket I picked earlier and looked at Kronos.

"You made this?" I asked.

"No." Kronos nudges his glasses with a glint. But his hand is trembling a little.

"Where did you get all of those weapons from?"

"I brought it."

"But there aren't any labels on your weapons, that means it's illegal."

As I said, I threw one of the hilts to the principal. He caught it and took a glance.

"No labels indeed. Although the blade is crappy, but the hilt is high quality. And I have never seen this kind of design, not bad." The principal said.

When Kronos realized it, he seems regretful that he said that.

"...I forged it myself." He changed his answer.

"Oh that's nice. Can you fix the dual sword?" As the principal said, both of us threw the hilts to him at the same time.

Kronos caught it with his right hand between his fingers.

Brown and grey dusts started to circulate around the blades of the dual swords, and it slowly returned back to its original state.

"There." He said as he showed us.

Afterwards, he opened a magic circle and place his dual swords right into it.

"!"

Realizing that he did that out of habit, his motion freezes standing there like a sculpture.

Kronos element control is so good that he's able to make weapons with it.

I can't ask any question from him since he's currently in such a state. I guess it's Persia's turn.

"...Persia."

"Y-Yes?"

Looking at her nervous expression, I can't help but to laugh inside my heart. It's really rare to see her in such a state since she's always the one to tease others.

"The Silverlight family is capable in exorcising ghosts and demons, there's not much to tell about you since it's pretty obvious."

"....."

Persia stays silent. Since she knew she couldn't deny her family name as exorcist capable of defeating the calibre of demons.

But now... there's two headache left. Crimson Veludora Blaze and Rumelia Heartlock. From the start, their faces aren't changing from their usual expressions.

"Crim—"

"Tsk...! Shut up." He grumbled.

Damn it. Not even a chance to speak.

I gave Kuroyuki a signal, and she noticed.

"...Crimson Veludora Blaze, you shall let him speak."

With those words that she said, Blaze will do as so.

"Whatever."

Kuroyuki seems like an absolute ruler of the dragons... It's not really that surprising since dragons tend to obey the ones stronger than them.

“Forget it. Blaze can turn into his original form and even destroy this room. There’s no need for me to say that much.”

Blaze doesn’t give a care to my words either, he continues to glare at me.

“Actually I’m quite impressed in Rumelia Heartlock. Having to control one hundred puppets at the same time with string magic is not easy at all. Don’t you think so?”

“Not at all.”

Everyone remained silent under Rumelia’s emotionless expression.

“But you can tie everyone up in an instant with string magic isn’t it?”

“No I can’t.”

She remains expressionless as ever. It’s really hard to understand her.

“Well... whatever. There’s one total solid prove that all of you have been holding back.”

With this statement, everyone can’t believe what I have said. Even though that the statements that I pointed out from them are one of the fact that they are holding back but... there’s still a stronger prove.

Yesterday before Kuroyuki’s duel, I searched her battle history. She easily defeated all the S class students, of course, the five of them are included.

After the duel today I even gained a solid proof that they are hiding their powers.

“The five of you mainly focus on physical attacks. Why is that so?” I asked.

“What do you mean?” The principal asks.

...It seems that they don’t understand my question.

“All of you possesses elemental powers, which most of you even told me that you have before the match starts. And yet many of you didn’t use it during the match. Why is that so?”

Upon hearing this, those five except Rumelia flinched.

“No wonder something’s not right, I see now. You five brats meet me at my office later!”

“““““WHAT!?”””””

Except Rumelia, the four of them doesn’t seem happy at all.

I guess Kuroyuki knew it all along. From her looks, she’s not really surprised.

“H-Huh?! What about class?”

There’s an extra teacher here. It’s teacher Luna, standing behind the principal all along.



“Cancelled. Only for the S class and special class. I have work to do.” The principal said with a grin.

And so, with those words. Class really was cancelled.

### Chapter 3: The Black Sword

After the mock battle and the declarations of my results, the five S class students— foolish dragon, sword hooligan, Kronos Y Chronoclock, emotionless string girl and Persia Silverlight was ordered to wait for the principal at his office.

Kuroyuki returned to the special building.

Currently only the principal and me remained at the training room.

“Hey brat, remember to send me the report.”

The principal said with clarity, as he smacks my left shoulder a few times with his right hand, implying me to do it properly.

“Why? Isn’t my job just to do what you gave me?” I replied.

“A report is included as well, you stupid brat. I have tons of things to do already, and I’m not inviting you here just to enjoy a luxurious life, brat. Do you really think you are the only special student here?”

“Aside from that monster... Writing a report is so troublesome... can I give you a recording instead...?”

The principal went speechless for a while after I refer to Kuroyuki as the monster. He rubbed his head with his forefinger due to headache.

“...I will overlook it since you are so lazy. Can’t believe you are much more stupid than you look.”

“HUH...? LIKE YOU ARE ONE TO TALK.”

...My nerves snapped for a second there.

“Of course I can. You looked like an idiot in front of the <Winter Princess>, so aren’t you stupid than you look?” He stated.

For a second there, I agreed with him. Kuroyuki does makes me look like an idiot at certain times...

“Oh right, did you ever heard about a rumour of the black sword at my academy?” The principal asks with a smirk.

The mysterious message did say that I need the black sword. But I can’t tell him about that.

“...No.” I replied as I gave him an irritated look.

“Stop lying, brat. It was so famous that many across the world came and attempt to take this sword. Even though not a single one is able to take it.”

“...Then why are you telling me—”

"It was said that the wielder of the black sword is surprisingly stupid, foolish, hot-headed, short tempered and mentally retarded. All of that suits you perfectly, so you should give it a try, brat."

His eyes are totally laughing.

...I see, he just wants to make fun of me.

"You made that all up...! It was famous during those days, but yet so many came that it was so annoying and you even put up a magic barrier and technology-made barrier to prevent outsiders from entering to the school's range."

"...Ah, I was founded?" He gave a carefree look.

"It's so obvious...! How could I not found out?!"

"Hmm. Hahaha...!"

The principal gave a bold laugh as he turned away and walk towards the door, showing his back.

...something wrong with him...?

"...wait. Where's the black sword?" I shouted.

His footsteps didn't stop.

"Ask the princess, brat. She will definitely know where it is." He said, as he waved his right hand and walks away from my sight by the door.

"Stop trying to act cool you old man!" I shouted as I tailed him.

"Damn it at least let me look cool for once...!"

The principal's nerves snapped as he peeked his head and glares at me from the door.

As soon as I leave this room, the lights and the entrance door closes automatically.

We stood oppositely facing each other, as we exchange our glance.

"Hmph... aren't you annoying?" He gave a small huff, with his arms folded.

But why... is he looking at me with such a tender gaze...?

"Aren't you the same as well?" I responded against his sarcastic remark.

"Heh. You stupid brat."

He turned his back with a smile on his face, and slowly walks away, not even saying goodbye.

...what a weird guy.

Both of us parted our ways back to our own place.

Special Class.

It's still afternoon.

Because class is cancelled and it's still a little early till lunch break, I decided to read an e-book opened from my device.

I read this book several times, over and over again. But even so, I still can't help but to be amazed by the contents of the story.

It's the history of the darkness <First Star-Revolution Generation>.

He was the greatest genius ever known.

However, his achievements as a genius are not through inventing stuffs to bring benefit to the world or creating new theories or formula to let the world grow and progress.

It's surprisingly different from those genius that was known.

He's a prince of one of the strongest empires throughout the world.

He gave up on everything and travel across the world, saving and destroying many nations by him and his comrades that they came across.

He's indestructible despite constantly facing overwhelming odds both in political and military matters.

It was said that his achievements was more than enough to make him rise to create the strongest empire in the world.

But 20 years ago, he disappeared from the world.

Many tried to search for him but nothing was found, even his comrades that was with him. Not a trace of him even till now.

...As interesting it may be, but I don't even know his name. All of the names at any source related inside this book were all erased completely by someone unknown.

Come to think of it, did Kuroyuki get her powers from the first generation or inherited from her parents? Who are they anyways? But I can't get any info because it's considered a privacy here, how troublesome...

"...Lucifer."

Kuroyuki, who was sitting next to me that was reading her book up till now, called my name.

My ears twitched as Kuroyuki suddenly call my name. Why did she suddenly do that? Is it because she wants to know my position as another special student...?

"What is it?" I replied as I faced her.

"...Close your eyes." She whispered.

She placed her hand on my cheeks— ow, ow cold...!

What does she wants from me...? Maybe something special perhaps, a kiss?

"...Okay."

Just as I was about to close my eyes, I felt some bad vibes from her. I noticed that her hands were abnormally clenched tight.

"K-Kuroyuki!? Why are you clenching your fist!?" I inadvertently cried with my eyes wide open.

"...You said that I shouldn't kill you by then, so it means now..."

She's referring to that time when I embraced her.

I tried to escape but I can't, she pinned my head with her grip that was on my face.

"WAIT ISN'T IT OVER ALREADY!? THAT MEANS YOU ARE GOING TO PUNCH ME!?"

"...I will make it as painful as possible..."

I struggled as much as I could, but her grip was just so tight that I couldn't pull it off from my face.

"DOESN'T THAT MAKES IT WORSE!?"

"...Then I will make it less painful as possible..."

"THAT MEANS YOU WILL GIVE ME EXTRA HITS!! DON'T HIT ME WITH THOSE FIST OF YOURS!!"

"...Then stabbing you a few times would be enough..."

"WHY DID IT TURNS OUT LIKE THIS!? ISN'T THIS MUCH MORE PAINFUL THAN BEING PUNCHED!?"

"...Because you told me not to hit you with my fists..."

"DON'T DO ANYTHING VIOLENCE!!"

"...Then something that isn't violence is okay...?"

"What do you mean by that...? GACK!?"

She used a knife-hand technique and chopped on my carotid pulse at the back at my neck.

"Are you trying to knock me out?!"

"...Such tenacity... how about a few more tries?" She said as she stared at me with a sadistic smile.

Kuroyuki seems to give up.

She stood up from her seat and tied her hair in a ponytail, then walks to the dining section and took an apron that was hanged near it.

I walked and sat at the dining chair at the dining section.

Kuroyuki wore the apron then walks to the kitchen section which was just next to the dining section.

With a slight wave of her hand, all of the automatic cupboards opens and extends— showing all of the utensils for cooking.

She took a spatula from the automatic cupboard. It's the length, size, and shape adjustable spatula. I have the exact same one at my home too.

She then took a clay pot with a lid and a medium sized frying pan from the large cupboard and placed it on the stove.

Kuroyuki shove her hand inside the teleportation-receive box and took out a bag of ingredients.

...It seems she already ordered the ingredients before I enter the special class. It used a teleportation device to send it here and paid using online money transfer.

"...How long are you going to stare...?" Kuroyuki glared at me with her cold eyes.

Something silver grazed across my cheeks and stabs on the wall fixed— oh, it's just a knife.

"THAT WAS DANGEROUS!! HOW CAN YOU THROW IT DIRECTLY TOWARDS ME WITHOUT ANY HESITATION!? WHAT IF I DIED!?" I complained.

"...I'm going to cook, want to help out...?"

She ignores my blabbering and clapped her hands twice. All the cupboards closed immediately afterwards.

Somehow her ignorance feels a little like Persia.

I never imagined she would ask me to help out. But even so, she's looking down on me, staring at me with eyes saying 'can you actually cook?' and she gave me a scornful look.

"But what are you going to cook? I'm average at certain styles." I replied.

It all depends on what she is cooking though. Our cooking styles differs so does our tastes, it may end up a failure or something different.

"...Soy sauce chicken and minced pork long bean." She said.

"I can help out." I replied confidently.

What do we have here...?

The main ingredients are chicken breasts meat, minced pork, and long beans. The seasonings are oil, soy sauce, black soy sauce, water, white wine, ginger, garlic, white pepper and black pepper. Utensil's used are clay pot, frying pan, spatula and a knife that was thrown just now.

First, wash the long beans thoroughly with water. Peel off the head and tail, then cut them to half to shorten it's length.

Kuroyuki added some soy sauce and a little of black pepper to the minced pork. She squash the meat with her hands to mix the flavour thoroughly.

Pluck off 4 pieces of the garlic then peel off the skin of the garlic pieces. Next, slice two pieces to crumbs while the remaining two to slices.

Take a fair piece of ginger. Slice off the skins then cut the ginger to slices.

Kuroyuki poured some sesame oil to the frying pan and circulates the oil to make sure it expands and covers a certain area and heated up by heat.

I threw the garlic crumbs into the frying pan and Kuroyuki fries the garlicks with the spatula. The minced pork was then added quickly into the frying pan. Kuroyuki stabs the minced pork several times and she flips it for a few times with the spatula.

The pork crumbs looks almost ready to be well done. I threw the long beans and added a dash of water into the frying pan. As Kuroyuki fries it, I can smell the strong taste and flavour from the minced pork. Finally I added a dash of salt as the minced pork French bean is almost done.

After finishing cooking the minced pork long bean, I wash the frying pan quickly with water and clean away the scum. Kuroyuki pre heats the clay pot on another stove.

Kuroyuki pours an amount of sesame oil to the frying pan, as I threw the chicken, garlic and ginger slices into the frying pan. Kuroyuki fries the ingredients to half raw, then pours some water and added some soy sauce and condensed soy sauce onto the frying pan and heated it, then pour them into the clay pot.

Kuroyuki then added a dash of white wine into the clay pot, and closed it with a lid.

It's pretty easy since the both of us has such synchronisation in cooking.

Looking at her reminded me of my little sis. The first time she cooks, she goes 'Ow! Big brother it hurts...!' when the sprinkling hot oil sprayed on her hands. So cute.

That also reminds me of my magical pet. The first time she cooks, she destroyed almost half of my kitchen, with a messy look on her face and a smile.

.....That was also cute, in another way.

"...Who taught you how to cook...?"

As both of us are waiting for the chicken to heat up in the clay pot, Kuroyuki suddenly asks a small question that I didn't expected to hear from her.

"What`s this? Are you trying to stalk me— AHHH!!?"

"...Don`t misunderstood." She said, with a fierce gaze.

Plus, her demon`s grip was squeezing my face.

"ALRIGHT I`M SORRY I WILL TALK!!!"

She release her hand. You could have been honest and say you are curious in my amazing cooking skills...

"My dad taught me the basics, and I taught myself the advanced." I murmured.

"...Your dad...?" Kuroyuki tilted her head.

".....Yes."

Suddenly, I felt something inside my heart was stirring up. As my emotions started to weight heavier and heavier, as if it`s... being loaded by chunks of rocks.

I could feel tears, slowly being gathered on the corners of my eyes.

".....!"

Kuroyuki`s surprised and confused. She silenced herself immediately after she saw my expression.

.....

".....What happened.....?"

After she hesitates for a while, she gathered her courage and asks me in a caring tone.

"...Six years ago, my parents were gone..."

...After I managed to gather my strength and say a few words, I saw my tears dripped one by one onto the floor.

I don`t know what came over to me at that moment. All I knew was my tears dripping to the floor as I stood there silently, holding it in with all I could.

".....huh...?"

Kuroyuki hugged me on her shoulders as she pats my head. Although all I could feel from her was none other than her cold body and hands, but, it was warm... a feeling that I have loss it for six years.

"...There, there..... everything will be alright."

She rubs my head continuously over and over again.

"... (Sniff)... I don`t want to show you my pathetic face... I was supposed to look cool..."



She let out a small huff, as her cold hands stroked on my head.

“...Heh.....in front of me, you will always look pathetic...”

She was like a mother... caring her child by hugging it in her arms. I might get addicted to this...

“... (Gasp!)...”

Grasping the situation, I quickly stepped back, avoiding from her embracement.

“...I-I`m sorry.”

I quickly apologize as I realized that I did something embarrassing in front of her.

“...No...It`s fine...” She said, open in her arms and stepping forward as if it`s trying to hug me again.

At that moment, I really wanted to dive in. But after some smell flow into my nose...

“The chicken!” I yelled.

Realizing there was something still cooking, Kuroyuki immediately switched off the stove and open the lid from the clay pot. Luckily that there aren`t anything burnt.

Both of us look at each other, and heave a sigh of enlightenment.

We placed our foods on the dining table with a clatter, sat down and ready ourselves for lunch.

“.....Can you tell me what happened...?”

Kuroyuki asks again, but my emotions are stable this time, I guess I can tell her a little about my past.

“...Six years ago, my parents went missing on a certain day.” I said.

“...Missing...?” Kuroyuki tilted her head slightly as she murmured.

“...I still remembered clearly. On a certain day as usual, I woke up early, just as I thought that I`m going to have a daily routine morning jog with my father. What I saw, was nothing more than a messy house with the door opened and some things destroyed.”

“.....!”

Obviously anyone would have been surprised after hearing this weird situation.

“...I don`t know what happened, but both of my parents haven`t returned till this day.” I said.

“...Are they being kidnapped...?”

“My father is a thousand times stronger than me. There`s no way that they could have been kidnaped.”

“.....Then how do you survive on your own...?”

“...Luckily that my parents brought a large amount of shares from a company. The dividends that I received is more than enough for me to take care my family.”

“...Family...?”

“...I have a little sister and a magical pet.”

“...Little sister...”

“...That little sis of mine was really independent. Even though she cried for a week after that she knew what happened. She takes care of the house hold together with me.”

“...She`s really strong willed.” Kuroyuki have a sombre smile.

She said this with a strong agreement, as if that she have been through this before.

“My cute little sis was so attached to me, she begged me for six months not to go to this academy.”

“...Why did you come here then...?”

Kuroyuki was curious, as if she was interested between me and my little sis`s relationship.

“...To take care of them, I didn`t went to school for six years. It might well have said that I was living in an unbalanced life.”

Kuroyuki has an expression that she understand the feeling that I have all too well.

“...Then...? Why finally she let you to come...?”

“...I escaped from her. After all, she`s able to transfer to here after six months.”

The Imperial Knights Academy enrolment is only for races that is on human age of sixteen to eighteen years old.

“...But if that`s so then shouldn`t you transfer here together with her when she turned sixteen?”

“...There`s a reason for that. I came to search for something important in this academy.”

“...something important...?”

It seems it`s time to ask her about the black sword.

“...There are two things. First, it was you, the ex-student council president that has the key to unlock my seal. And a black sword, the night fury.”

“...that black sword...!” Kuroyuki muttered as she widen her eyes.

She really knew where it is. Thank goodness, this will save a lot of time.

“...There`s a black sword sealed under the basement of the school grounds.”

“That`s the one, perhaps.”

“...But... it was impossible to take it, I tried...”

“Don`t worry about it, I guess I`m the only one who can take it.”

“...Then... I will lead the way...”

I didn`t expect Kuroyuki would offer help.

“I`m really grateful about that. It seems you went there before, are there any traps?”

“...Yes.”

...Well... perhaps I should understand them a bit more.

“Then I`m going to need five more persons for that too.”

“...Those five...?”

The students that hid their powers, Persia, August, Kronos, Rumelia and Blaze.

“I will make sure that they will be going too.”

“...Why them...?”

“I know they are curious about the black sword and I needed to write a report about their power.”

“...I see.”

It seems Kuroyuki is more curious about the black sword rather than their hidden powers.

After lunch, I sat on my personal seat— lazing around.

“...So, when are you going to ask them...?”

Kuroyuki that just finish from her dishwashing work, sat at her seat next to me and murmured.

What her question means is when I'm going to invite those five S class students for the black sword.

“Tomorrow. Well, that's better though. Since that idiot is a better negotiator than me.”

Her ears twitched, she quickly turns her head towards me with her head slightly tilted.

“.....Idiot..?” She asks with an innocent look.

Ah... I haven't told her about my condition.

“...Since you know about the twenty seals, I guess it will be easier to explain.” I said.

“.....What do you mean...?”

Obviously Kuroyuki's confused.

Anyone would have find it eerie if a person is referring himself as an idiot like another person.

“Did you noticed the difference between the yesterday afternoon me and the current me?”

Kuroyuki looks a little irritated when I mentioned this.

“...Yes... you turned surprisingly annoying after the twenty seals activated, even till now.”

She's really blunt with that. Am I really that annoying to you?

“That's rude.”

“...But... I don't recall that the twenty seals will change your personality... it doesn't have a large sword either...”

Kuroyuki ignores my remark and states her doubts.

“That's where the point is.” I said.

“...the large sword...?”

“Yes. The large sword that stabs me the last will split my normal personality into two.”

“...That's a strange seal...”

Kuroyuki placed her fingers under her chin, she's trying to figure out something.

"...Indeed. I don't have any memories for what reason that I was sealed..."

Kuroyuki knew there's no point in asking further about how I was sealed. She changed to something else.

"...So... what kind of personality do you have...?"

"...Well, the current part of me was a genius and the other part of me was an idiot."

"...You seemed more like an idiot." She stated a sarcastic remark.

Why you always managed to stab a spear through my heart every time? You aren't even looking. Are you a professional killer or what?

"Anyways... today when the sun sets, I will turn back to my idiot self. That guy will always rush in like an idiot, so please take care of him tomorrow." I said.

"...you are referring to a stranger... that's a part of you."

She's totally trying to laugh there...

"You'd like my actual personality better though." I muttered.

She quickly looks at me with a flummoxed look.

"...Actual personality...?"

Judging from her tone, she's trying to say 'you still got more...?"

"But I can't remember anything the day my actual personality take over." I stated.

"...Then... how do you know about your real existence...?"

"My little sis told me. She says that every night of the full moon and the night before my birthday, my seal will hold off and let my true personality to be active for a day."

Kuroyuki's trying to figure out what my real personality is.

".....Then what was your true personality like...?" She asks with a serious look.

...She gave up.

"My little sis says that I'm a genius and an idiot at the same time...?" I said in an unsure tone.

...Till now I still don't understand what she means at all.

".....That may be true..." Kuroyuki said with a sombre smile, as she let out a small huff.

Huh? You know what does it meant?

"...and she says that he was nearly strong as her." I added.

“...Strong...?”

“My little sis may not look or hear like it, but she’s terrifying strong. Perhaps even much more of a monster than you.”

Filled with excitement, Kuroyuki breathe in and exhale.

“...I guess so... since you were able to defeat me...” She uttered.

My head popped a vein as I hear her remarks.

“Speaking about that... it was totally obvious that you purposely let me win the match...!” I refuted.

“.....I did not.”

Trying to deny as much as she could, she broke her eye contact from me as she gaze to the window.

“You did. I almost died from the last battle.” I said.

“...It doesn’t matter, you are my partner and I will make sure that all of the students in this academy will accept this truth.” Kuroyuki said.

...I’m surprised to hear that answer. She must have planned for this the moment I became her partner.

But she really isn’t being honest at all, she should have stop with her demon gripping technique.

“That’s really thoughtful of you.” I said.

...I wonder if I said something wrong. She’s glaring at me fiercely.

“.....Don’t misunderstood.” She uttered with a redden cheek.

As usual, she isn’t being honest at all.

“Perhaps you like me— ACK!!?”

She caught me unguarded and clamped my head without hesitation.

“...Didn’t I say it clearly...?” Her eyes are dead serious.

“OW!!!!!! I`M SORRY PLEASE LET GO!!!”

“...You are much sturdier than I expected.” She said as she release me from her grip.

Based on her remark, I guess she’s impressed on how I survive from her deadly grip that many times.

“If I`m not sturdy enough, I`m dead by now.” I uttered.

“...Makes sense.”

"That makes me remember something." I murmured.

Just as the conversation is about to die down, something important rang in my head.

"...what is it...?" Kuroyuki stares at me.

"The person that you promised to, is he Lucifer Vermillion?" I asked.

The first day that I met her on the top of the pink tree, the person that she wanted to duel with is Lucifer Vermillion, not me.

After collecting information about that mysterious childhood friend of hers, I'm able to deduce that the childhood friend is him.

"...Un."

Hearing that, she immediately broke her eye contact away from me, gazing towards the sky through the window.

Seems to me she doesn't want to talk about this. But she knew can't avoid from it since she crossed the line by questioning me about my past too.

"What's your relationship between you and him?" I asked.

"...He's my childhood friend...my first and only true friend..."

Kuroyuki's gaze slowly turns to the front and downwards, looking gloomy.

"...Then is he someone as capable as you...?"

"He's much more capable than me...!"

This was the first time that I heard Kuroyuki saying words in such strong and confirmed tone.

Lucifer Vermillion's existence must have been a great deal for her.

"What happened actually...?"

"...He protected me... from a berserk magical beast..." She said with an extremely tired voice.

Kuroyuki mistook me as him from the first impression, which means he might look like me and he might be just as old as me.

"Wait, based on what you said, it's eight years ago...that means... HE'S ONLY EIGHT YEARS OLD!?"

Berserk magical beasts are originally magical beasts. They were infected with magic disorder disease that made the magical beast went berserk.

Not only magical beast, even humans and other races had a chance to get infected with magic disorder disease and went berserk.

However, there's one and only one case, that a human getting infected by magic disorder disease, is able to retain it's conscious from getting berserk.

Many tried to research her, but that human disappeared twelve years ago.

The cause of the magical disorder disease till now was still unknown.

Magical beast itself is already hard to deal with, even now in my current state I won't be able to win unharmed, not to mention a berserk magical beast.

That person was able to protect her from a berserk magical beast in such young age, he will definitely turned out to be someone powerful by the time he grew up.

".....Even though he was afraid... but he still tried his best to protect me." Kuroyuki's voice is shaky.

"...He didn't win against the beast, but he managed to leave a wound on the beast after getting injured greatly." She continued.

"How on earth did the two of you survived?" I asked.

"...My father and his father came rescuing us. Thanks to the wound he left on the beast, they defeated it in a second."

...Their fathers are monsters. It already doesn't matter whether the beast is injured or not.

"What happened to him...?"

"...He was sent to a place together with his family to heal his wounds... because his body is getting weaker as days passed by..."

"But judging from what you said, he survived didn't he?"

Kuroyuki shook her head in response.

"...He didn't response to any of my emails..."

Kuroyuki looks like she's able to burst into tears in any moment.

"Then what about the promise...?" I tried to let her avoid from getting sad.

"...It was that day, before the beast attacked. He took me out and we played outside, then I... make a promise with him..."

She's blushing as she placed both of her hands on both sides of her cheeks.

Her emotions changed too fast.

"But why such a promise...?"

"...What do you mean...?"



"I mean... why didn't you just promise him that the both of you'd married when you are old enough?"

"...He's a meanie."

Kuroyuki pouted, too cute.

"Huh?"

"...He says that he needs a wife that's as capable as him."

".....Oh."

...But that's too absurd. There's no way an eight year old kid could have such capabilities that's comparable Kuroyuki.

"As the way you are now, don't you think it's enough?" I said.

"...That's impossible. He's a genius far more than I am."

Since even Kuroyuki herself says this, I'm sure that person is more insane than her.

"But that doesn't mean that he's better than you as he is eight years ago, right? I mean, everyone changes."

"...Then why do we change?"

Kuroyuki looks annoyed from my statement, as she asks me this question in return.

To be honest, I'm not prepared for it. But... if you ask me how I would change, it's definitely for my family's sake.

"...For others?" I answered her in an unconfirmed tone.

Kuroyuki gave a slight nod as she heard my answer.

"...Correct. 'We change for the sake of others— the person we hold dear to. Anyone would've changed themselves for their dear ones, be it a better person or even a villain, just to prevent them from getting hurt. But yet... they always tend to fail to see what the results will be after their change, and ended up hurting them eventually. So that's why, I want to change in a way, where I can protect everyone from getting hurt— even going against the world itself is necessary.' That was his answer."

...Isn't her childhood friend, too matured...? At such a young age... he already understood about what being a 'human' is.

This world... is much more corrupted than it was seen.

It was said that we should live in harmony, where all the races across the world can live a peaceful life.

Aside from wars between different races... even the same races themselves is fighting among themselves.

Antisocial behaviours, arsons, burglary, childhood abuse, crime abroad, cybercrime, domestic abuse, fraud, genocide, hate crime, murder, manslaughter, piracy, revenge porn, rape and sexual assaults, robbery, sexual harassment, sexual slavery, slavery, stalking and harassment, terrorism, violent crime, war crime...

A nearly endless crimes and conflicts throughout the world and history is flooding into my thoughts.

Could it be... that her childhood friend is thinking of 'world peace' ...?

...If it's conquering the world then it might be feasible. Just kill everybody who oppose you then that's it.

But world peace is just a fantasy. There's a reason why nobody in the history of mankind has ever managed to achieved it.

Hunger, differences, religion, poverty and wealth, values, war and etc. these values are all where the problems lie.

Where do we even begin...?

I think it's impossible to get an answer for that even with that of an insane brain...

"....." Kuroyuki noticed my silence.

She gave a smile of appreciation to me, as she looks at me and let out a small huff.

"...yes, this road itself is harsh, difficult, and painful. But what comes at the finale was the fruit of my hard work and the results that I wanted to see it with my own eyes'." Kuroyuki continued.

"...Is he really eight years old...?" I uttered.

She chuckled.

"...That's why, I changed myself to this extend. It's not a bad way, isn't it?"

Yes. A monster you are, and on top of that— a terrifying one.

"Indeed... but how could you be that sure he will mark his words...?" I said.

"...He will definitely does as what he says, since he's an idiot."

Kuroyuki said so as she giggled afterwards.

But didn't she said that he's a genius...? I'm starting to get confused here.

"Come to think of it, why do you mistook me as him...?" I asked.

"...That was embarrassing. You aren't even anything like him." Kuroyuki looks irritated.

“Oi. That definitely hurt my feelings. Don’t just simply throw your insults towards me.”

“...Since 90% of the consolations are fakes, hearing insults instead would have pushed you forward.”

“No doubt that he’s the one who told you this, isn’t it?” I said.

She responded with a cold smile as I said that.

“...At least you have the looks that’s nearly like him.” She murmured.

In other words, she thinks I’m handsome.

“...Even though its average.” Kuroyuki added.

Oh.

Free time— a situation that was created from certain cases where one can do anything they want. For example, when class was cancelled by your teachers or lecturers. At times like these, many chooses to procrastinate by doing nothing.

For my case, it`s because my conversation with Kuroyuki ended too quickly.

Kuroyuki decided to leave me be as soon as she opens her book and starts to read.

Actually she`s been reading for more than 5 minutes already.

Due to the boredom that lasted for four and a half minutes from her five minutes, I decided to make my way to the arts and craft section and started to draw anything I saw.

Obviously, the thing I saw first was definitely Kuroyuki who always catches the most attention...

...and I ended up using her as a model for my drawing.

“Hmm...” I took a peek on her as I landed the mechanical pencil on the drawing paper.

It`s halfway done right now.

Comparing to her who uses many tools for art, I`d rather say simple is nice.

I wonder why she emits such a dignified aura whenever she was reading a book. It`s really attractive.

I drew her hair— ah, the lead broke. It leaves an ugly mark there.

I restored it carefully by repairing that mark completely, because it would have ruined her image on this beautiful piece of paper.

The dignified look on her face while reading a book makes her so maturely beautiful. An artist such as me would get addicted to use her as a model.

And done. Oh, thirty-seven seconds, a new record.

“...That was quick.”

Realizing that I`m done, she clamps her book shut and turns her head to the right side facing me.

Eh!?

“...If you want to use me as a model, you should have said so from the start, since I`m beautiful.” She said confidently.

You shouldn`t say that out loud. Just how over confident are you?

“So you noticed...” I murmured.

Kuroyuki stood up as she flicks her hair, and walks towards me.

She silently observes my finished drawing as she stood next to me, bending her waist slightly. It makes me want to pat her head.

"...Not bad, for an amateur..." She murmured.

Her expression gives a look saying 'somehow... you passed'.

"Oi. I only use a mechanical pencil, what do you expect?" I refuted.

"...only a mechanical pencil...?"

As soon as she noticed the mechanical pencil placed on the stand, her eyes widen in surprised filled with an amazed look.

"Yeah, and...?" I said, as I knew she still have more to say.

"...If you say this is drawn by a mechanical pencil, many wouldn't have believe it."

"Oh...? Is that a compliment? It's rare for you to compliment others." I said.

"...That's true... since their talents were much lower than mine..." She uttered.

...on a second thought, that's true. You shouldn't underestimate Kuroyuki's gifted talents. For her to compliment me, that means my skills are somehow better than your average artist.

"...Is that... your drawing record...?" She asks.

She noticed there's a small stopwatch window that I opened, at the bottom right corner of the paper board.

"...Thirty-seven seconds...!" She's totally astonished.

"...It's six seconds faster than mine..." She whispered.

But I can totally hear it here...

...I see. She too also records her drawing speed...?

Things like this tend to happen if your skill is in top-notch and you have nothing else to do.

"...go and sit there." She commanded.

She's ordering me to sit at my chair. Why so suddenly...?

"...what are you trying to do?" I asked as I stared at her.

Kuroyuki stared back at me with a fierce gaze, which I accepted it directly.

"...break your record." She uttered.

...what a sore loser.

"...Don't just suddenly order me to sit there without my permission..." I mumbled.

"...You used me as a model without my permission." She retorted.

"Ugh..."

She's right. I have no choice but to sit and pretend to read a book.

As soon as I started to sit down and took a book I placed on the table, Kuroyuki started to draw.

...my head was only thinking 'how well will she draw me?' stuffs like that.

"...Done." She whispered.

Even though the stand blocked my view towards her, but I can tell she's looking at the stopwatch display and nods her head in satisfaction.

Getting curious, I quickly approach her and looked at the stopwatch display.

"Thirty-four seconds!?" I inadvertently cried.

I'm in a completely shock.

I raised my head and quickly observe her drawing.

Hmm... I thought she is going to cut off a few bits here and there, but she drew it precisely without a single mistake.

"...I win." Kuroyuki smiled confidently.

"No wait, compared to yours, my hair was way shorter. So it's not fair." I said.

Kuroyuki agreed to that as well as she looks at my drawing and gave a slight nod.

"...Then how do you want to compete...?" She asks.

It's simple. It's always outside on our window, the tree that one can't help to be mesmerized...

"That pink tree. Let's sit near that window and draw it, remember to record the time." I said.

"...That's fair enough." She accepted.

It seems that both of us are sore losers. To be fair at who is better and faster in drawing, this will be a great idea.

"Ready?"

"...Un."

'THREE, TWO, ONE, START!'

I'm so focused on it that only eyes are moving as my hand is drawing unconsciously.

"And done!" "...Done."

I didn't expect our finishing time was that close.

Both of us looked at each other with an amazed expression, without saying another word.

"Time?"

We looked at our stopwatch display, which was placed at the middle between us.

"42.45 seconds" "...42.45 seconds."

What the heck??? It's the exact same time!? Is it a miracle or something?

"I want to see what you have drawn." I demanded.

"...Me too..."

Unsatisfied, both of us exchanged our drawings.

Hmm... the tree with the soft flowers, the trunk, the grasses, the sky...

It was drawn really detailed, as if it's real...! Same as mine!?

"...Impressive...it has the same details as mine..." Kuroyuki too thinks so.

Change in rules.

"Why don't we change the drawing tools this time...?" I said.

"...Paint brush?"

As Kuroyuki waved her hand, several cupboards opened with a section of paintbrushes to choose from.

"What about the colours...?"

"...Each of us has thirty six of them..."

Kuroyuki took out a glass of water and the water colours sets from the cupboard that was prepared with the same amount.

"Alright then, if the time ended up the same, then we shall let the teachers to decide the winner."

"...Fair enough." Kuroyuki agreed.

"Oh, extra rule. It must be painted full scale."

"...Okay."

Both of us ready our paint brushes and water colours, as we took out the exact same set out from the cupboards.

As soon as the cupboards closed, we readied ourselves.

“Ready?”

I asked, as I press the timer.

‘THREE, TWO, ONE, START!’

My hands took the brushes and dipped into the water colours.

I dipped the brush into the glass of water and next, a water colour. I took the brush and painted it on the drawing paper.

Lastly, I threw the brush upwards.

Then, I grabbed another smaller paint brush and repeat the process for four times. It lasted for nearly 2 seconds.

I grabbed the brushes that threw and repeat those steps over and over again.

I couldn't care on how Kuroyuki is doing, but I can tell that she's doing something similar to me.

...Just a little more...

I grabbed all of the five brushes with my left hand in a fast speed, and placed them into the glass of water.

“Done!” “...I'm done.”

“Eh?” “...Eh...?”

We looked at each other.

Again, both of us are surprised to see that we finished it nearly at the same time.

“That's impossible...! It's too insanely fast!” I said.

“...Right back at you.”

We looked at our stopwatch displays.

92.92 s, the exact same time.

We quickly change our places and look at the paintings.

“...It's hideous.” Kuroyuki uttered.

“Well, so does yours.” I replied.



The painting looks horrible. But yet, it's not completely dried yet.

As the water colours slowly flows down till the bottom of the paper, the entire painting was dyed with beautiful colours, as if it's decorated with magic.

To even take the time and humidity into account...

...I was deeply amazed and mesmerized by her skills.

The painting feels so alive.

...This is the first time I found someone who have the specific skills like me.

I look at Kuroyuki, who's been staring at my painting without another word.

Her eyes sparkled. It sparkled like the stars at the dark night.

"...I take back my words. It's like... magic." Kuroyuki murmured.

"Yours too feels like it's alive..." I replied.

Kuroyuki was vexed, as she placed her right hand on her temple.

"...I can't believe it. An idiot like you was this skilled in arts..." She murmured.

From her looks, she's trying to say 'I still have a long way to go...'.

"Like I said, don't judge people by its look." I said.

"...But he said don't judge a book by its cover." She replied.

Is Kuroyuki referring to Nightwalker...? She's already accustomed herself from my personality splitting in just one day...? How scary.

"Geez, don't take on an idiot so seriously." I said.

"...Very well. I will proof myself that I will not lose to an idiot like you." Kuroyuki declared as she smirks and looks at me.

This girl... she took a roundabout way and point it back to me.

From the back of her words, she's saying— it doesn't matter, because both of you are idiots to me.

"Bring it on, you over-confident girl...!" I stated.

And so... Our battle of arts continued till the night, changing in many styles and using different combinations and titles as much as we could.

In merely six hours, we drawn 136 pieces altogether and tied out nearly every time. Although sometimes there's a slight difference, but it ended up a draw.

It isn't fair if we are the judges, so we decided to let the teachers to be the ones to judge instead.

"Ugh... all that drawing is making me hungry." I mumbled.

After we finished in placing back the paint brushes and others, I sluggishly walked towards the dining chair and laid flat on the dining table.

My body isn't tired at all. The only part of me that's tired is my brain. I focused too much than usual.

"...I will cook."

Kuroyuki looks fine. She casually walks to kitchen section and took the utensils for cooking.

"I guess I will help too."

I don't really want to let her do all the work. After all, we are partners.

"...No need. I still owe you a dinner..."

Since she says so, then better don't force myself to.

"If you say so— oh shit...!"

The twenty seals activated. Nineteen black magic circles appeared and circulates me.

It's time...!

"Ku.....! Gahack.....!" I tried to hold in my cries as much as I could.

I can't do anything but to struggle against the pain.

As soon as the magic circles disappears, a large black magic circle appeared— with a large sword flying out from it and stabs through my chest.

"Grk-----!!!!!!!!!!!"

The shockwave sent me flying backwards and knocked on the wall.

.....

I let out my breath slowly.

So exhausted...

"Ugh.....I don't want to go through that again..." I mumbled.

Although I said so, but yet I'm still going through every day. So what's the point in hoping for it anyways...

"Kuroyuki.....?"

Her motion still freezes there. She's in a state of complete shock.

"...Are you going through that every day...?" She murmured.

"Don't worry, it's not such a big deal..." I sighed with a depressed look.

"...Even though you don't want to go through that again... are you a masochist, perhaps?" She murmured.

"No I'm not. Please pretend that you hear nothing." I replied.

Kuroyuki treats me very differently... she really likes to tease me when I'm in Nightwalker state...

"...So what I saw doesn't matter, is it?" She said.

"Ah, that's fine— NO! JUST PRETEND THAT YOU SEE OR HEAR NOTHING!!"

Kuroyuki chuckled upon my response. But afterwards, she turned silent, and turned back towards the kitchen then started cooking, as if nothing has happened.

"So... what are you going to cook?" I asked.

"...That's a secret." She replied.

She shoved her hand into the teleportation-receive box, and took out a small box. I guessed the ingredients were placed inside.

...Our atmosphere died down. I wonder why does it happens every time...

"You aren't going to add in poison are you?" I said.

As Kuroyuki switched on the stove and placed a frying pan, she turned her head and looks at me.

"...If you want, then I can—"

"WAIT!! THAT'S JUST A JOKE!!"

"...That's disappointing..."

How scary. This girl is scary. Originally I wanted to say it as a joke but she took it seriously....

"ARE YOU SERIOUS ABOUT ADDING IT?!" I raised my voice out of shock.

"...Un." She nods.

"Please don't. I don't want to die so soon..."

".....Hehe, I'm just teasing you..."

Her cold smile makes me doubt her.

“Really?”

“...That`s a joke.” She turned serious and started to pour oil into the pan.

“WHICH ONE IS?”

She didn`t state clearly which one is it...!

“...So do you want the poison or not...?” Kuroyuki asked again.

I refuse her with my hands shaking clearly saying no.

“NO!! I DON`T WANT IT!!” I added.

“...Okay... then...”

She took out a small purple bottle from a cupboard that has some bubbles popping..... eh?

“WAIT!! WHAT AND TRYING TO POUR!? AND WHERE DO YOU GET THAT!?” I shouted.

I stood up and ran closer towards Kuroyuki, reaching out my hand— trying to grab the bottle.

But Kuroyuki caught my hand instead, locking my hand with her grip on the bottle.

“...I brought it from the black market...”

Kuroyuki`s face was like ‘do you want me to buy some for you?’

“ISN`T THAT ILLEGAL!? WHY WOULD A NORMAL ACADEMY STUDENT WOULD JUST GO AND BUY POISON!? AND WHERE IS THAT BLACK MARKET!?”

“...In case of emergency...and a secret.” She replied.

“WHY ARE YOU LOOKING AT ME WITH THOSE ‘YOU PERVERT’ EYES?! ARE YOU SERIOUSLY THINKING TO KILL ME!?”

“...Un.” She nods her head.

“DON`T JUST ‘...UN’ ME!!! CAN`T YOU TREAT ME LIKE HOW THE WAY YOU TREATED NIGHTMARE!?”

“...Like... this...?”

“ARGH!?”

She grabbed my face with her hand.

“ACKKKK!!! I`M SORRY PLEASE HURRY UP AND LET GO!!!”

“...So, do you want me to treat you like Nightmare...?” She asks with a smile.

She releases her hand, and I`m catching my breath like I have just been through death.

"Please don't, I had nightmares already."

"...That's a pity..."

Getting driven away by Kuroyuki, I sat at the dining chair, waiting for her to finish.

As she cooks, Kuroyuki hums sweetly. It's quite pleasant.

Her mood looks happy today. Speaking of which...

"Kuroyuki."

"...What is it?" As she turned her head, she smiled sweetly.

...Her smile is so attractive.

"For these six months... are you always alone in this room?" I asked.

Kuroyuki gave a slight pause as she hear my remark.

".....Yes." She broke her eye contact and continued fry.

"...you never went to the cafeteria?"

"...It's obvious if you think about it. For example, this morning when you woke up..." She murmured.

Oh... Her fans...

Kuroyuki pours her cooking to two plates. Judging from the aroma, I can tell what it is.

"...Please do."

As she said, she placed the dishes on the dining table— it's Paella.

"...you aren't going to try at the cafeteria...?"

She asks with a dumbfounded look as she sat down next to me.

"It doesn't matter, yours are the best anyways. I'm sure am lucky." I replied with a smile.

"...Is this a confession...? Die—"

Kuroyuki glares at me with an awful amount of killing intent.

"No, no, no this is not a confession...! It's just as a friend!" I quickly responded.

Somehow Kuroyuki looks slightly disheartened as she took her spoon and whispered a few words before she ate. Her voice was so small that I can barely hear it.

But reading from her lips movement, she said '...as a friend, huh...?'

After a relaxing bath and a change of a comfortable pyjamas set, I jumped onto the bed.

...It's still too early to sleep yet.

Although it's just day two, my little sis and magical pet surely must have missed me like crazy. If I don't call them every day, they will kill me for sure.

...My life sure is full of people with violence. To think they are serious about this matter...

At this school— the Imperial Knights Academy, there are special rules that makes it different from every other school. All students are required to live on campus, and are forbidden from contacting anyone outside the school.

Even contacting immediate family is impossible without the permission of the school.

Leaving the school grounds is also forbidden.

These are the reasons that my little sis prevents so much for me to come here. She said she would rather die than not meeting her big brother— me for one day.

However, there are also many other facilities so that student don't suffer from being restricted. There are karaoke, theatre rooms, cafes, and even boutiques— you can say it made up a small city.

It's not too bad... I need some spare time exploring the city at the weekends.

As for the reason I'm able to contact my little sis is because... I used a special way from being detected by the school's system.

That's also one of the reasons with my little sis to let me come, it's so difficult to negotiate with her... It's so tough being her big brother, I'm in tears now...

[Do Do]

"BIG BROTHER!!!!!!!!!!!"

Ow. My ears aren't bleeding are they? I know they are excited, but why do they yell every time I call them?

"Big brother, when are you coming home?"

This was the first thing that my little sis ask on my second day.

"IT'S ONLY THE SECOND DAY!!" I yelled.

"Restia missed big brother so much, it feels like a billion years already..."

"Restia you are being too exaggerated."

"Of course not! Restia's love towards big brother was always unlimited."

“Even though your big brother is really happy after hearing this, but don’t you think that you behaved so much like a pervert?”

“Really? Let me ask Ruby... RUBY COME HERE!!!”

Seems to me she’s calling out to Ruby, I wonder what is she doing... And by the way...

“DON’T JUST YELL SUDDENLY!!” I shouted.

“MASTER!!!!!!!!!!”

Luckily I took the phone away from my ear. Geez, another troublemaker is here.

“Your master says that I behaved like a pervert.” Restia whispers.

Although it’s pretty hard to hear from the phone, but I can still hear my little sis’s remarks.

“Don’t worry master, Ruby’s love for master was always unlimited.”

My little sis shouldn’t have asked her. Both of them are more or less the same.

“Don’t you think the both of you loved me too overly much?”

““Of course.”” They replied in a strong tone.

A clear and straight answer without any thoughts. I’m really happy.

“At this rate, both of you won’t get married.”

“Don’t worry, Restia will marry her big brother when she’s old enough.”

“Ruby will definitely mate with his mast—”

“DON’T JUST GO AND MARRY OR EVEN MATE ME!! I LIKE GIRLS LIKE THE ONE NEXT DOOR!!”

“...are you referring to me...?”

Oh shoot. I yelled from the small burst of anger and the girl next door— Kuroyuki Shiroha clearly heard what I said.

The door connected to her room has a black aura flowing out from the gaps of the door. I tried to lock it but— There aren’t any locks!?

“AH NO!! IT’S NOTHING!!!”

I replied to Kuroyuki, while trying to keep some distance away.

“BIG BROTHER, WHO IS THAT? ARE YOU CHEATING ON RESTIA?”

“MASTER?”

Oh no... They heard it, their voice suddenly became heavy toned and scary.

“WHY DOES THE BOTH OF YOU SOUNDED LIKE THAT IT MATTERS TO YOU!? CAN’T YOUR BIG BROTHER LIKE A GIRL LIKE ANY OTHER GUY!?”

“NO. YOU CAN’T.” “NO, MASTER CAN’T.”

Why? Why did the both of you cut off my love route?

“RESTIA WILL ONLY ALLOW BIG BROTHER TO MARRY BIG SIS. ANY GIRLS THAT STAY NEAR TO YOU SHALL BE ELIMINATED.”

Suddenly my little sis isn’t cute anymore, her voice is really scary. I saw a dark aura flowing out from my phone.

“Erm... Restia? You are scaring big brother here...”

“WHO IS THAT GIRL?”

Where did my cute little sis go? Now she isn’t even calling me big brother anymore...

“What are you even trying to do to her...?” I asked in a shaky tone.

“DON’T WORRY, I WILL DEFINITELY KILL HER.”

[Beep]

I ended the call.

Guess that will let her cool down for a while.....

Who the hell is that!? Why did my cute little sis turned out like that!? And who is this ‘big sis’ anyways?!

I lived together with her for so many years but I have never seen my little sis being that scary.

Tons of questions is flooding into my head. I’m panicked and confused. I don’t even know what to do...

BAM!

The sound of the door that was connecting to the next door was opened with a strong push.

“...just now, who on earth are you talking to...?”

Kuroyuki’s eyes are fierce, serious and scary. And with her sudden approach, I don’t even have time to react...

Oh no. At this rate, she will find out that I’m using the phone through illegal ways. But if it’s her... I need to be honest here.



"My...my little.....sis..." I replied.

"...then why are you saying that you liked the girl next door?" She glared at me.

Such killing intent...!

Shit. How should I answer her? If I said I liked her, she will kill me.

"...Ah, I meant the girl next to my house..."

"...I see..."

She returned to normal. Thank goodness.

I wonder why, but Kuroyuki casually sat on my bed. That`s when I realized she wore in her black coloured sleep dress, looking beautiful and sexy.

Anyone would have find it hard to handle their lust towards her.

Ah, I`m totally getting charmed here... but that doesn`t mean I will charge in straight and devour her.

Those two little girls did something even more extreme than this... and besides, I have my pride as a guy...!

"...So... you are talking to your little sis..." She murmured.

Even though Kuroyuki is looking at me, but yet... her eyes looks distant.

She`s pretty calm. I guess she has her own way to contact her family too.

"She`s angry of me."

".....How cute."

"What do you mean cute? What a strange sense of cute you are having there." I said.

[Di Di]

Oh, Ruby called. Things don`t seem to look good here...

"...Your little sis..."

"...my magical pet."

"...pets know how to use phones..."

That`s because she`s a magical pet.

"Hello?"

Kuroyuki is eavesdropping our conversation openly.

"Master, Restia is angry and crying."

"... (Sigh).....Really?"

"She utter words like.....'stupid big brother, how can you forget about the girl that you loved.'"

"...Eh?" That 'big sis'?

"...the girl you loved...?"

With Kuroyuki speaking so suddenly, Ruby reacted immediately.

"HIISSSSSSSS!!! MASTER WHO IS THAT GIRL?! IS IT THE GIRL NEXT DOOR THAT YOU LIKED?!"

Ruby usually 'hiss' when she is angry. I'm sure Kuroyuki can tell that it's a cat human.

Shit. Speaking about adding oil to the fire. Ruby found out.

"...Oh...? I thought it was the girl next to your house...?"

"OUR HOUSE IS A BUNGALOW, THERE AREN'T ANY NEIGHBOURS!!"

Oh shit. Speaking about throwing fireworks into the fire.

I looked at Kuroyuki, who has been smiling at me for some time.

"Err..... could you be a little softer this time...?"

"...No can do." Her cold smile was filled with dreadful pain behind it.

CRACK!

"ARGHHHH!!!"

As expected, I'm being tortured by her demon's grip.

"NYAAAAAA???!?! MASTER?! WHAT HAPPENED?!"

"...your master fainted."

Kuroyuki snatched my phone from the lifeless me and have her way with it.

"HIISSSSSS!! WHAT DID YOU DO TO MY MASTER?!"

"NO I HAVEN'T FAINTED!!" I shouted.

"...I see... your body is quite sturdy..."

"NYAAAA!!! DON'T GO AND KILL MY MASTER!!"

It's pretty noisy with all that ruckus.

“...why is it that noisy Ruby?”

My little sis heard the ruckus through the phone, and asked Ruby. I`m surprised that I can hear what she said despite her voice is very small from the phone.

“MASTER`S IS GETTING KILLED!!”

WHAT KIND OF DESCRIPTION IS THAT!?

“NO I`M NOT! YOUR MASTER WON`T DIE THAT EASY—“

“...still talking... how about this...?” Kuroyuki pour more strength into her grip.

“ARGHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHH!!?”

“MASTER?!” “BIG BROTHER?!”

“...your big brother fainted.” As Kuroyuki said, she let out a small huff.

“...Not...yet...” I said.

My soul is nearly gone...

“NYA!? WHAT DID YOU DO TO MY MASTER?!” “WHAT DID YOU DO TO MY BIG BROTHER?!”

“YOU WITCH!! DON`T THINK THAT YOU CAN STEAL BIG BROTHER`S HEART BY ACTING AND SOUNDED LIKE MY BIG SIS!!” Restia shouted.

What on earth are you saying, little sis...?

“...Don`t worry, he`s a pile of scrap now. Besides, I will never get interested in him.”

Really...? A pile of scrap...?

“Oh really? Thank goodness...”

“...Now he`s lying pathetically on the bed.”

...Oh no.

“WHAT ARE YOU DOING WITH MY BROTHER ON THE BED!!?” “WHAT ARE YOU DOING WITH MY MASTER ON THE BED!!?”

How should I even explain this—?

“BIG BROTHER WAS SUPPOSED TO DO IT WITH BIG SIS, ME AND RUBY!!”

I WILL DEFINITELY PUNISH YOU WHEN I GET BACK.

“...That`s a really cute little sister you have there.” Kuroyuki looks at me as she said.

Really... What was your senses in cute?

"...You really love your brother, don't you?" Kuroyuki chuckles.

"Eh? Even you can feel it. I wonder why my big brother doesn't feel love from me and Ruby though."

".....you are a failure as a brother." Kuroyuki said to me.

"...I don't want to hear that from you."

It's not like you have siblings.

"Give the phone to my brother please beautiful frozen maiden."

...Restia.....!? Don't say that!?

"...Lucifer, you want to die...?"

Not good. She definitely know I'm the one who told Restia to call her this. Her eyes are saying 'you definitely won't make it tonight.'

"BROTHER PLEASE DON'T DIE!!" "MASTER!!"

"...I will let go of your brother once since you are cute."

"Thank you for saying that I'm cute."

...Don't be that polite towards your enemy...

"By the way frozen maiden, who are you...?" Restia asks Kuroyuki.

...What happened to the phone that was supposed to pass to me?

"...Stop calling me frozen maiden. Call me beautiful sis."

"...No! Big sis will always be the most beautiful person to me."

"...You shall call me beautiful sis." Oh, Kuroyuki's tone became heavier.

"...No..." Restia's voice gradually became smaller.

"...Call, me, beautiful, sis." Kuroyuki's cold voice makes my body shivers.

"...B-Beautiful sis..."

"...That's good."

No good. She tamed my little sis.

"...Little sis...? Are you okay there...?"

"...Big brother who is this girl why is she that scary...?"

"...From what I told you yesterday..."

"A dangerous frozen maiden with scary eyes and a deadly demon's grip almost killed your brother. A cold, hopeless, cruel, dangerous weapon, that hunts, kills and freezes everyone to death. Is it?"

...Restia I have lost hope towards your future.....

"...Oh? So the other you sees me that way huh?"

Ah... am I going to die here...?

"...Eh? Beautiful sis you know big brother's condition already?"

".....With that twenty of his, this will be a problem until we get the black sword."

"Please help big brother! He's been like this for eight years and nearly every day! I only wanted my big brother to be free from his seals!"

Restia.....

"...Don't worry, I will help him since he's my 'partner' after all."

"PARTNER?!?" "NYAAAAA!!??"

Kuroyuki looks at me with a face saying 'did I say something wrong?' I replied her by nodding my head.

"...He's my teammate and classmate." Kuroyuki state it clearly.

"Phew... I thought that kind of partner."

"Ruby thought so too."

"So... beautiful sis? How do you think of my big brother?"

"...He's surprising annoying, stupid, hopeless, and pathetic."

I want to dig a hole and bury her.

"MY BIG BROTHER ISN'T THAT BAD!!" "MASTER ISN'T THAT BAD!!"

"...I'm just joking. On his first day he harassed my body..."

"WHAT ON EARTH ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT!? I ONLY CARRY YOU BACK TO THE CLASS!!"

"OH. WHAT HAPPENED BIG BROTHER?" "MASTER...?"

Both of them are scary. Even Kuroyuki was flinched out by the sudden heavy tone.

"That beautiful sis you mentioned fainted when I duel with her. So I carried her back to the class with BOTH OF MY HANDS FROZEN!!"

"...But...you touched my body." Kuroyuki added.

"OF COURSE I TOUCHED YOUR BODY!! OR ELSE HOW DO I CARRY YOU BACK!?"

"...BIG BROTHER, WHICH PART DO YOU TOUCHED?"

"THAT`S WHAT YOU WERE CONCERNED?!"

"I WILL SLICE OFF YOUR DIRTY HANDS." Restia is serious.

"THEN IT DOESN`T EVEN MATTER WHERE I TOUCH ALREADY!!"

"...Do you want me to help...?"

"DON`T STIMULATE HER!! AND WHEN DID THE BOTH OF YOU STARTED TO GET ALONG?!"

"THEN WHERE DID YOU TOUCH HER?"

"THIS DOESN`T EVEN RELATE TO WHAT I SAID!!" I yelled.

"BEAUTIFUL SIS, PLEASE DO THE HONOR."

"...Understood." Kuroyuki looks serious, with the ice sword on her right hand ready to attack.

"WAIT A MINUTE!!! I ONLY PRINCESS CARRIED HER!!!"

"Then you should have said so earlier big brother."

My little sis returned to normal. Thank god. I`m saved—

"BUT I STILL CAN`T FORGIVE BIG BROTHER CHEATING ON ME AND BIG SIS."

"RUBY TOO."

...or not.

"THAT`S NOT EVEN CHEATING!!"

"...If he does simply touch me, I will make sure to kill him." Kuroyuki said.

"NO!!! DON`T KILL MY BIG BROTHER!!!" "DON`T KILL MASTER!!"

What on earth does these two girls want? End my life with their own hands...?

".....How cute...I wish I can meet back my little sis too..."

Kuroyuki went gloomy all of the sudden when she mentioned her little sis.

"You have a little.....sis?" My little sis asked her.

"...Un."

"It must be painful for her..." I said.

Hearing this, Kuroyuki eyes narrowed and she sits on top of me, while using her grip— on my neck.

"...you really wanted to die...?"

This... was the intent to kill...! Her grip was so tight...!

"...Can't... breathe...!"

"LET GO OF MY BROTHER!!" "LET MASTER GO!!"

"...your brother needs to have a taste of death."

"...I'm just... joking...!"

"BIG BROTHER REALLY MEAN IT SO PLEASE DON'T DO IT!!"

Unwillingly, Kuroyuki release her hand away from me. There's even a mark on my neck.

"...If there's a next time, I will end your life."

Her eyes is serious about this matter, as she looked at me with a slightly teary eyes.

"...I'm so sorry."

I apologized. It must have stimulated some unpleasant memories from her.

...I can't simply run my mouth in front of her or else I might end up dying from her hands.

"Brother are you alright...?" "Master...?"

"Yeah..."

"...I'm going back...!" Kuroyuki said unhappily.

She left the phone on my bed, then turns and walks back straight to her room, looking angry and upset.

With a large slam on the door, she froze the door with her ice.

"...Big brother..."

After the silence, Restia called out to me.

"Hah... I know... this is the first time I'd ever talk to someone else... I can't even communicate normally to others... of course she gets angry..."

“...She`s a really nice person big brother.”

“...Yeah.”

“But big brother really liked her...”

“Ruby doesn`t like master staying together with that girl!”

“(Coughs)! O-of course not!”

“Big brother don`t lie to Restia. Restia lived with brother for fifteen years, how can Restia not know big brother`s favourite?”

“Even though Ruby loves master that much...”

Both of them really know me well. I have no choice but to admit.

“(Sigh)...yeah your big brother likes her.”

“Big brother shouldn`t. Big sis is still waiting for big brother.”

“Ruby doesn`t like that big sis that steals master`s heart...”

“Can`t you explain what is that big sis like...?”

“Big brother loves her very much.”

“I don`t remember, and you aren`t even explaining.”

“Big sis was like... really, really similar like the frozen maiden.”

“.....But it can`t be right? If that frozen maiden was really big sis then she should have remembered your big brother already.”

“...Restia guess so...”

“By the way, where`s Ruby?”

“Ruby was upset and crying on the corner because she was ignored a lot.”

“Oh... Ask Ruby to listen the phone—“

“Ruby don`t smash the floor!!” Restia yelled.

...my magical pet is going to destroy my house again.

“Sorry big brother, Restia will go and stop Ruby. Bye and goodnight big brother.”

“Remember to say goodnight for me to Ruby too.”

“...N.”



[Beep]

Call ended.

Geez, there are even more things now that I don't understand.....

I guess I will sleep now and find the sword tomorrow...

The bright morning rays of the sun shines into my room, lighting up my room. Birds are singing in their sweet melody, waking me up.

It's only the third day since I enrolled to this academy... and a lot of things happened.

Surely today, I guess.

Ugh... my body felt cold, especially my left side.

What happened to me...?

I opened my eyes and tried to move— but there was something limiting my left side's movement.

There's something soft, holding my left arm and left leg. It's quite a pleasant feeling.

I looked towards my left— the blanket blocked my view. But there's a big pile of thing inside it.

Curious what was inside of it that's so cold, I flipped off the blanket with haste.

“WHOA!!?” I inadvertently shouted by surprise as I couldn't believe my eyes.

That 'thing' was a girl. With her fingers gently holding my hands, her soft body embracing gently on my left arm and her legs are clamping on my left leg, wearing in her black silk sleeping dress.

Her cold breath repeatedly breathed in and out, it makes my shoulders goes tingly.

Despite that I shouted loudly, she still haven't wake up.

In such a situation, the girl would probably scream and the guy would probably sent to jail.

I need to observe where I am.

I can only move my head, if I moved too much I might wake her. And besides, she's really soft.

.....this is my room.

Who on earth are you?

Her long silky black hair was gently placed on my bed, and she had a 'purr' sound while she was breathing. It was cute.

I can't really see her face, since she sticks so close to me.

It feels so much like Restia when she snuck into my bed.

I reach out my hand and stroke her head gently.

“...Un...five more minutes...” She murmured softly.

How cute. But since that she says so, I will let her sleep for another five minutes.

But something doesn't feels right. Shouldn't I be shouting and freaked out that a girl has snuck into my bed? Perhaps I'm used to it since those two little girls always sneak into my bed every night. Till now I still don't know why they do this for.

I waited patiently on my bed to let the time pass.

It's been five minutes, time to stroke her head.

".....It's been five minutes already...?" The girl murmured.

That girl opened her eyes, it is a beautiful bluish colour.

But suddenly, her body freezes and her eyes widens in surprise...?

"...ARGH!?" I cried.

BAM (The sound of me falling to the floor)

She pushes and kicks me with reflex, of maximum strength that makes me fall from the bed.

"...Who, who are you...!" Her voice is trembling, and it seems familiar.

"That's my line!" I retorted while standing on my feet.

"...You.....!"

She sat gracefully on my bed with her face slightly redden, embracing her body in a defensive posture as she grits her teeth.

"Eh?!?" I was stunned.

That girl, was Kuroyuki Shiroha.

".....Why did you come to my room?!?" She uttered.

She glared at me, as if she didn't know what happened.

"This is my room!" I protested.

Can't you even see where you are?

"...Eh...?" She looks around.

Her eyes narrowed as she forms a spear and pointed it at my throat.

"...What did you do to me...?"

How did you came up with such conclusion?!

Damn. Her voice was so scary, it feels like talking to a goddess that was going to punish me.

"You are the one sneaking into my bed!"

"...Impossible. Die."

Ignoring my protest and forcing her conclusions onto me, as an answer she extended her spear, trying to stab me.

In that short moment, I grabbed hold of the spear head with my left hand and I break it with my grip.

"Stop being unreasonable!" I shouted.

"...I don't want to hear anything from a sexual harassing low life."

It's no use how much I explain, she won't listen and I haven't even do anything to her yet.

An ice sword formed from her broken spear, she lifted her hand and swings it horizontally.

"...Frozen blade." She whispered.

She's going to slice me with her sword, it's already that close...!

SHING! (The sound of her sword slicing)

I caught her sword by clamping it with both of my hands. The coldness of the sword froze my hand and stuck to her sword.

"I REALLY DIDN'T DO ANYTHING TO YOU AND NOT EVERY GUYS WILL DO STUFFS LIKE THESE!!"

"...I don't think you are an exceptional."

She still doesn't believe me.

"Then what on earth do I need to do to proof it to you other than dying!?"

"...Call your little sister."

What are you even trying to obtain from my little sis?

To prevent her rampage, I took my phone and call my little sis, later then passed it to Kuroyuki.

[Do Do]

Luckily my family has a healthy habit of waking up early.

"WHO ARE YOU?"

My little sis answered the call. She's as sharp as ever, she knew I wouldn't call her during the morning. She immediately know it wasn't me that who wanted called her. That voice of hers was so scary that it makes my heart shakes a little.

"...Your brother forced me to sleep with him yesterday."

"Eh?"

"BIG BROTHER!!!!!!?"

"WHAT THE HELL ARE YOU SAYING TOWARDS MY PURE AND SWEET LITTLE SIS!!?"

I totally didn't expect that Kuroyuki would frame me that fast.

"...your brother trespassed into my room and carried me onto his bed last night."

"BROTHER YOU CROSSED THE LINE."

"I DIDN'T!! IT'S HER WHO SNEAKS INTO MY ROOM AND CLAMPED MY BODY!!"

I tried to snatch back my phone but it's useless, Kuroyuki pinned me down on my bed by using her demon's grip.

"...stop resisting, it's useless." She said.

CRACK (The sound of my skull breaking)

"ARGHHHHH!!?" I screamed in pain.

"Wait, my brother's not interested in girls."

My little sis finally calmed down. But am I really not interested in girls...?

"...he isn't?" Kuroyuki looks surprised.

"He's only interested in big sis, me and Ruby."

"WHAT ON EARTH ARE YOU SAYING!!?"

"...you, despicable, pervert...!"

CREAK~ (The sound of my head twisted)

My head has been twisted in a dangerous anger, where it's nearly seventy degrees already.

"ARGHH!? YOU DEMON!! MY HEAD IS NEARLY BREAKING!?"

"Beautiful sis let go of my brother please~"

Restia's charming voice. It's pretty effective on most peoples, sometimes it works on me too but...

"...No."

As expected... it's useless on her.

"Geez you were really similar like my big sis."

"...I don't care." Kuroyuki uttered.

Once Kuroyuki enters into a state that was meant to kill, all things was unable to affect her.

Now at my current state, my neck has been twisted to nearly eighty degrees.

"Please let go of my big brother. Even though he strokes your head, but it was just a sign of love since I always sneaks into his bed."

My little sis is too scarily sharp. She clearly knew what was happening over here.

"...I see."

Kuroyuki loosens her hand. My neck is aching like crazy now.

"...Do you know how to release your brother's seal?"

"Huh...?"

An unexpected question from Kuroyuki. Even my little sis did not expect that.

"...No. Only my real brother knows how to unseal it."

"...The real him? ...During the full moon? How troublesome..."

Apparently I knew nothing about the real me.

"Yes."

"...Well then, thank you and good bye."

That's so sudden. Kuroyuki takes away the phone from her ear and she ended the call.

"...I will wait for you in class, tell those five to come here as soon as possible."

Kuroyuki looks at me with serious eyes. I guess that she's determined to get that black sword.

After that, she walks back to her room and froze the door.

I'm still lying on my bed and wondered— what on earth happened just now?

After the pancake breakfast, I followed Kuroyuki's instruction and reached the S class.

It's nearly 10 am. Even though it's still considered early, but I'm sure most of them already gathered inside their class.

TOK! TOK! (The sound of door knocking)

Come to think of it... is there anyone who install doors like these nowadays...? The old classic wooden door that needs to be opened manually...

"Who is it?"

A monotone voice sounded through the gaps of the wooden door, it was a girl.

CREAK~

She opened the door. That girl has a light purple hair with an expressionless face. It was Rumelia, I didn't recognise her for a moment there.

"Hi—"

BAM! GACHANK!

Before I can even speak, she immediately closed the door calmly at the fastest speed possible, and even remembered to lock the door.

"Hmm? What happened Rumelia? Who is it?"

A guy's voice sounded through the gaps of the door. I can't really tell who is it, but I guess it was Kronos.

"Nothing."

Curse you Rumelia. How can you say like as if nothing has happened?

KLOK! KLOK!

I knocked the door even harder this time. This time I will make sure someone other than her shall open this door.

"Huh? There's someone out there after all?"

The same guy noticed. Actually everyone in the class should have noticed.

"No, there's no one. It was just the wind blowing."

Rumelia continue insist it in a monotone voice. Just how much does she hates me?

"I will go and take a look."

I can hear that person`s footsteps walking towards the door.

GACHANK! (The sound of door unlocking)

CREAK~ BAM! GACHANK!

.....I didn`t even get to see that person`s face clearly and yet he opened and closed the door in only a second and even remembered to lock the door.

“Huh? What happened to you too?”

I recognise this voice. It`s Persia.

“It`s nothing.” That guy replied Persia in a monotone voice.

What happened to them?

“Now see what happened if you don`t believe me.”

Rumelia seems to be complaining at the guy that opened the door.

“You two, there`s someone out there isn`t it?”

It seems that Persia knew there`s someone out there. Thank goodness.

“”It was only the wind.””

Those two bastards answered with a clear and same answer.

...I felt myself vanished into thin air.

“Really? Then the wind sure is strong today~”

Persia...? That`s obviously a lie! Can`t you doubt them even a little? It`s indoors and where does the wind even blow from?!

Damn it. Last resort.

BAM!

I sent the door flying with a kick. Luckily there`s no teacher today because the other five was still out cold, same as what Kuroyuki told me.

“HI. I CAME HERE TO FIND YOU FIVE.”

I can feel that a vein popped right on my forehead and my face twitching.

The five of them sat on five of the ten sofas, circulating a rectangle glass table. There are several plate of breads, toasts, jams, and three cups of teas are placed on the table. Seems to me they are eating breakfast.



Hmm... their classroom looks like a four star hotel.

"Hello Lucifer~"

Persia's greeting voice was like an angel's, it makes me felt more less irritated.

"Why are you here?" Rumelia asks with an emotionless expression and monotone voice.

Looks to me that she hates me. From her tone, the things that happens before doesn't felt like it ever exists. I really want to hit her with the door.

"You sure know how to greet somebody that's standing out there for some time." I uttered.

"Thank you for your compliment." Rumelia shamelessly thanked me.

No matter how you understand it, it's definitely not a compliment.

"What do you want from us~?" Persia asks curiously.

Her eyes blinked a few times, it's really cute and adorable. She knew I wouldn't come all the way here just greet them.

"I need the help from the five of you—"

""""No.""""

Before I can even finish, four of them rejected already...

"Okay~" Persia you are an angel, too bad I already have someone I like or else I will propose to you.

Ignoring them, I continued.

"—to obtain the black sword under the basement of the academy."

I noticed Kronos's ears twitched.

He raised his head immediately, with a toast covered by strawberry jam on his mouth.

"MPDH OAS GOW!"

...I have no idea what is he talking about.

"What are you doing? Helping this annoying person." Rumelia mercilessly slaps Kronos's head.

His childhood friend— Rumelia, is able to understand his language. It seems Kronos changed his mind and wanted to go.

"(Swallows)... It's the black sword...! I bet it was made with super rare materials!! I won't be a man if I don't go!!"

His eyes was shining, perhaps it was because that the lights was reflecting from his glasses. By the way, his reaction towards the black sword is too exaggerating.

"Fine. I will go with you." Rumelia said emotionlessly.

Childhood friends... huh?

Now three of them is going.

"I want the famous black sword. I will consider if you let me have it."

The sword guy, August wanted the black sword, too.

"...No way, you already have a special sword."

"Tsk, then go by yourself! I won't help you for nothing!" He demanded, clicking his tongue openly.

"I will let you swing it for a minute." I said.

He's nicknamed <Sword Saint>, I'm sure that he's willing to accept my offer. Since I can see that he's pretty obsessive with swords.

"Five minutes." He bargained.

"Deal."

"So... Blaze?" I looked at Blaze as I asked.

"Tch. You lowly human. Don't speak my name that casually." This guy hates me, somehow.

Is it because he's part of a dragon...? Dragons hates to hear anything from someone inferior to them. BUT I'M DEFINITELY SUPERIOR THAN YOU...!

I have no choice. Luckily there's someone with a higher standing is able to help.

"Kuroyuki is going too." I uttered.

"What!? Why will she... help a lowly human like you?"

Dragons tend to honour individuals that are stronger than them. In this case, since Kuroyuki defeated Blaze before, he's willing to give as much as possible to help her.

"For no reason." I replied.

"Grr... I will overlook it this time." He said annoyingly.

Okay... that's it, then. This... is surprisingly easy... At first I thought it's going to take me hours for this.

"Well then, shall we go?" I asked.

“Are you blind....? Let me finish my breakfast first.” Blaze muttered.

I waited for them as soon as they finish their breakfast. Geez, they are slow...

All of us exit the S class as Persia locks the door with the key.

Hmm.....?

...The door was fixed? There`s not even a dent...!

“Thank you.” Kronos looks at me with a glint.

Is he telling me that he`s the one who fixed it...?

But I decided to ignore him.

'STUDENT ID: LUCIFER NIGHTWALKER VON NIGHTMARE. PERMISSION TO CROSS BORDER ACCEPTED.'

The special building is placed with a special border and barrier. Only the special students, the principal, and the Student Council Presidents are allowed to pass through this border.

To allow other students or executives to pass through this border, either one of those persons must accompany them and grant them permission to pass through.

The reason for creating the border is rather simple, it's to protect Kuroyuki from stalkers.

The border automatically opens for the peoples that was allowed to pass through, so that's why I didn't notice when Persia brought me there and sometimes I went in and out.

After letting the four of them to pass the border, we went straight directly to my class.

"...What took you so long?"

Just before I was going to open the door to the class, the door opened suddenly with Kuroyuki charging out and glaring at me. She's losing her patience as she mutters in displeasure.

Everyone except Rumelia, flinched when Kuroyuki came out from the class. Is she really that scary...?

"These guys are having breakfast, it's not like I can hasten them." I replied.

Kuroyuki took a quick glance on them.

"Hi~ Kuroyuki~"

As soon as Persia's eyes met Kuroyuki's, she greeted Kuroyuki with a cheerful smile.

"...morning." Kuroyuki replies with a warm smile.

She then give the other four her sharp glares.

I look towards Kronos— he twitched.

"M-Morning."

I look towards August— he flinched.

"H-Hello."

I look towards Blaze— he's shivering.

"N-Nice to meet you."

I look towards Rumelia— as expressionless as ever.

“Morning.”

Indeed Kuroyuki is the girl that stands on the top. Those four that ignores me earlier now greeted her. Such a difference in status quo...

“...Shall we go then?”

Kuroyuki only looks at me and Persia when she says that. Is she not good with others around...?

“Yeah~”

The fearless Persia still keeps her cheerful smile on, bringing sunshine to this cold atmosphere.

At first I thought we are going to another place, but I`m surprised that we took the stairs, and continued to journey two storeys below ground.

We reached a basement with a large and vast space, it`s nearly as spacious as the first year training room at the central main building.

“What the heck?! It was just two storeys below our class?!” I`m shocked.

“...I didn`t told you?” Kuroyuki have an ‘I thought I told you already’ face.

“No you don`t...!”

“...You were supposed to know where it is.” She replied.

“How should I ‘supposed’ to know?! It`s only my third day!!” I refuted.

“...Then what is the barrier outside there for? The principal should have told you that already.”

...Huh?

So the border out there... is another barrier for the black sword...?

“Isn`t that barrier just to prevent you from stalkers...?” I asked.

“...It`s both.” She said.

“...Oh.”

To be honest, I`m quite impressed. The principal sure knows how to make things in place. Kuroyuki acts like a guardian for the black sword, preventing outsiders from it.

I realized that those five is awkwardly watching the two of us having out clatter.

Of course that`d be. Other than Persia, I`m the only one who talks casually with her.

Hmm... it`s pretty empty here.

Even though it feels shabby, but it`s not hard to breath here and there`s enough light source here.

The floor is made from white cement tiles, where the old construction technology is used. From the looks of it, it's unstable and it might collapse if I go all out...

The floor and ceiling have been filled with thick dust. Obviously there aren't anyone who came here to clean it up.

"So... that's the black sword...?" I said.

"...Yes."

As Kuroyuki said, she pointed towards the black sword that was stabbed on a rock.

It's the black sword— the Night Fury...!

I must get it no matter what.

#### **Chapter 4: An unexpected war**

I stepped a foot inside— nothing happened.

I stepped a foot forward— nothing happened.

I stepped another foot forward again— nothing happened.

I break the ground by stomping it once, there's a crack and— nothing happened.

I tried to kick the stone pillar—

“...What are you doing?”

Just by a few centimetres, my leg was stopped instantly by Kuroyuki's cold voice and glare.

I'm rather disappointed. I thought there will be traps that's similar to the ones at the dungeons I have near my home.

Actually I explored several dangerous dungeons I have near my home. Those dungeons are seriously scary, really scary. Till now I'm still unable to clear it...

“It's really strange, there aren't anything here at all.”

As I replied to Kuroyuki, I gently put down my leg.

“...The only strange thing here is you who's trying to break this pillar and cause this building collapse.”

She complained and followed with a cold glare to make sure I wouldn't do it again.

“Oh.”

I have nothing to say but to feel sorry for my reckless behaviour.

Speaking of which, August and Kronos already ran towards the sword without any hesitation, not even a slight pause during their run.

The moment they reached, they stood there— not saying another word.

After a while, both of them seems to be bewitched by the black sword. Because their actions...

“Such a beautiful sword! It's colour, it's design! It's power!” (August)

“I never seen such a black coloured material! What is this?! I want to know!!” (Kronos)

...are weird. Those two are weird. Really weird. More to gross, actually... It's just a sword...

They are overly untrammelled if you ask me, even though there aren't any so far... shouldn't they at least be aware of a small percentage of traps here?

“.....Those two are gross.”

After staring and looked at their actions for a few whole seconds, Kuroyuki bluntly mutters in displeasure as she furrow her brows.

“Are the two of you okay? Do you want me to call a doctor?”

Persia yelled innocently to those two. It’s nice of her to give them a possible solution.

“Better tie those two and make them shut up.”

Rumelia opened three magic circles and tie them up with her strings. Starting from the hands and feet then the mouth. She’s surprisingly effective on situations like this.

It’s surprisingly boring. It’s not as exciting comparing to the time when I explore dungeons with my little sis and magical pet.

Normally there are supposed to be poisoned darts, large boulders, large pothole, landslide, monsters, and many else...

...but it was rather different here.

Could it be... she activated those traps before...?

“Hey, Kuroyuki. Didn’t you came here before?”

After enduring it for quite a while, I decided to ask.

Kuroyuki did say she tried to take the black sword before, so it’s obvious she’s been here before. And besides, she’s one of the few students in this academy that’s able to come here.

“...Un. I did.” As she replied, she gave a slight nod.

“Looks to me, there aren’t any traps here at all. You said the trap is nearly impossible to break through...”

“...The only trap here was the sword itself.”

The sword itself? How direct. As if it was saying, ‘come and get me if you can!’

“...My finger broke the moment I touch it.”

As she murmured, she rubbed her right forefinger. The expression on her face is telling me that it hurts like hell.

What kind of trap is it anyways? I better be careful.

“Are you okay? It’d be a waste if your beautiful fingers broke again— ARGH?!!”

Before I could even finish my sentence, Kuroyuki gave me a cold smile. She demonstrated her gripping strength by squeezing my face.



...Such a unique way to reply to my question.

“...It’s fine now isn’t it?” She further increased her strength.

The thing that hurts here was her fingers that digs into my skin. Icings on my face increases the longer she grips me.

“ARGHH!! OKAY I GET IT ALREADY PLEASE LET GO!!” I shouted.

The moment I plead her to stop, she immediately loosen her grip. I lifelessly kneel on the ground like a soulless being.

Kuroyuki gave a snigger when she saw my expression. It’s scary.

...Forget about the sword now, I can only feel my face aching like crazy from her ice.

As I sat on the ground, clearing the ice on my face to sooth myself from the pain.

“It’s hard on you isn’t it~”

Her voice is totally making fun of me. Who is it?

I took a quick glance from the corner of my eyes. Seeing a pair of slender legs, I looked up immediately.

It was Persia— she gave me a smirk with her waist slightly bending down.

If you aren’t cute and sweet, I will definitely hit you with all I have— Oh? Guess I don’t need to.

“...Persia.”

The moment Kuroyuki tapped own her shoulders, Persia trembled like crazy. She’s totally caught off guard.

Her face stiffened like solid rock and it turned pale like a sheet of white paper under the harsh pressure from Kuroyuki.

“Y-Yes...?”

Persia’s head stiffly turned backwards as she replied in a shaky tone.

“...Careful with the jokes.” Kuroyuki gave Persia a cold smile.

“Y-Yes...!” Persia panicky replied.

I can’t help but to hold back my laughter from bursting out with all of my strength after seeing that.

The moment Kuroyuki turns and leaves Persia, I placed my hand on Persia’s shadow, facing her.

“It’s hard on you isn’t it~” I smirked.

“You meanie...!”

Persia pouted, as she hits me repeatedly with her fists. It’s so cute.

Oh, she sulked. She left me behind and went on to catch up Kuroyuki.

To be honest, Kuroyuki’s too much for us to handle. Even my little sis found it hard. I guess the ones that’s able to handle her are her parents... and her childhood friend.

I continued to walk.

The sound of footsteps that continue to penetrate through the basement...

...is left with nothing but loneliness.

Well, I already expect this to happen even before I came to this academy. I’m prepared for this since the beginning— loneliness.

...I heard footsteps. Is there someone behind me...?

There’s still someone standing behind me— it’s Blaze. He seemed even lonelier as he silently walks alone behind me.

This guy is troublesome to deal with. Especially his attitude. It sucks so much that even his classmates kept their distance away from him.

I don’t like him. But even so, I can’t seem to leave him alone.

“Hey Blaze—”

“Tch. Don’t speak to me you lowly human.”

...Is it me or his problem? I sense there’s something wrong from him, as if his pride has become... much more prideful?

Let’s leave him be for a while.

I decided to ignore him and walk. By the time I realize it, I already reached my destination.

...The black sword is just right in front of me. But yet, what’s with this feeling of wrongness? As if, the sword is telling me not to pull it.

All of us gather around the black sword and discuss what to do with it.

“So.....who’s going to do it?”

I gave a classic suggestion on whether who’s going to pull it out. Kronos and August are out since they were tied up and being left on the side-lines.

“...You.”

Kuroyuki looks at me with a face that's saying 'Obviously it was you'.

"Why me?"

"...You are the one who wanted to come here in the first place." She glared at me.

Oh, right. If I don't, they will surely come to hate me.

"What kind of trap is it anyways?" I asked Kuroyuki.

I'm still trying to figure out what can make her finger broke just by touching it.

"...Try it yourself." She replied, I guess she don't really know what it is.

I noticed Kuroyuki have been rubbing her finger every time she looks at the sword. It must have hurt a lot... Is she trying to make me suffer too?

"Alright then."

I placed my right hand on top of the black sword approximately two centimetres away from it— nothing happened.

"...Just touch it."

"Eh? Wait—"

Kuroyuki suddenly grabs and press my hand down— touching the black sword.

"WHOOAAA!!!? Grk...!"

My hand feels super heavy all of the sudden. If it isn't from my training to control muscles that normal people are unable to, my right hand would have been broken and I will have to suffer bone fracture.

Everyone was amazed.

I reluctantly muster my strength to pull my hand away from the trap activation range.

"ARE YOU TRYING TO BREAK MY FINGER TOO!?" I complained to Kuroyuki.

"...Of course not. It was your arm."

Kuroyuki gave me a cold smile. So she really wants me to suffer too... ARE YOU A DEMON OR SOMETHING?!

".....It was gravity magic that broke your finger." I said.

The black sword was casted with a strong gravity magic, making it nearly unobtainable.

"...I see." As Kuroyuki murmured, she took a step back away from the sword.

"What`s more, it was... several times stronger than our world`s gravity."

That means it needs a strength to overcome several times of the world`s gravity in order to pull it out.

Imagine it, all of the cells in your body weighed 0.000001 gram heavy. Will you even be able to walk?

"All of you stand back."

Blaze, who`s being alone and silent all the time, suddenly orders all of us to stand back.

Surely everyone is mixed with surprise and confusion, except the expressionless Rumelia.

"Blaze what are you...?"

Despite that, Persia is still willing to ask Blaze and try to understand why.

Blaze ignored her.

"Don`t do it, please."

I stood in front of him, hoping to stop him from such foolishness. Even though he`s a dragon, but even dragon strength can`t withstand such strong gravitational force.

It was probably luck that Nightmare waited for me to do it, because he can`t pull it out either.

"A lowly human shouldn`t have spoken!"

He glares at me fiercely as he reach his hand towards the black sword.

"GARGHHH!!!!!!?"

Getting irritated and annoyed too much by his behaviour. I landed a heavy kick on his abdomen, sending him flying backwards.

"...you put too much strength..." Kuroyuki said.

Obviously everyone disagrees with my barbaric action just now. But that`s the only way to deal with fools.

"Blaze are you okay?"

Persia shouts politely to Blaze that stood back up. Seems to me he`s fine.

"You damned lowly human! You dare to kick me?!"

As expected, Blaze is angry. He doesn`t like me to begin with.

"Sorry, but it`s just that... this sword was meant for me. You dragons can`t even withstand it for a second."

"I DON'T CARE...!" He shouted.

Oh dear, this is bad. I can't stop him if this continues. He's being too overly arrogant.

"Kuroyuki, freeze him. Let him chill out for a while."

"...Un."

Kuroyuki understands too. If this continues, Blaze fury will burn off this fragile basement and make it collapse.

"...Ice storm..."

Kuroyuki pointed her fingers towards Blaze. Creating a large amount of snow and howl towards him.

"Blazing wings!!!" Blaze yelled.

What the...! It's so freaking hot...!

The flames... it's blue...!

In the mock battle yesterday, Blaze flames were orange.

Swinging his fist, blue flames spreads out and forth in the shape of a bird wing.

Not only that, it's size and heat is three times larger and hotter compared to the time at the mock battle.

Their elemental powers intersected and it turned to steam. So hot...!

Blaze's fire is nearly on par with Kuroyuki's ice storm. Far more better than I expect for now.

The others could not believe their eyes as they saw something unbelievable happened.

"...You.....!"

Kuroyuki looks annoyed when her ice is being evaporated.

"Forget about freezing him."

"...Huh?"

I stopped Kuroyuki and stands in front of her, trying to analyse and persuade Blaze.

Are those... dragon eyes...?

"Blaze—"

"You shouldn't be speaking to me!! GARGHH!!!"

He charged towards me.

I realized something important. Leaving the sword aside first, I dash near to him instantly.

The raged Blaze immediately realized that what I am trying to do. He concentrated a large amount of blue flames in his right hand.

“One handed punching skill— Demon`s Right Hand Straight!”

“BLAZE OUT!”

Our fists clashed strongly. But Blaze couldn`t withstand my strength, he`s forcefully sent flying backwards and stumbled on the ground.

My arm was fine from the heat, but he burned a little on the sleeves of my clothes. Is our clothes het resistant...?

“...Are you okay?” “Is your hand alright?”

Persia aside, it`s surprising that Kuroyuki cared for me. But I don`t have time for this.

“Listen. We need to knock out Blaze.”

“.....Huh?”

The six of them doesn`t seem to understand on what I have said. ‘Aren`t we supposed to stop him, not to make him unconscious...?’ that`s what their expression looks like.

“Blaze... is one of the traps. Someone placed a dragon berserk magic here, making him going nuts.” I said.

“But... isn`t that magic only effective on dragons? He`s a hybrid. Shouldn`t he be going berserk the moment he stepped foot inside this basement?”

Persia`s questioning isn`t wrong at all.

“That`s why it`s half effective, that`s why that he didn`t went berserk before.”

This strong scale magic was placed here for a long time, but yet there`s a light effect on the surrounding area. Blaze might have been affected every day the moment he stepped foot inside this academy. It`s pretty difficult for him to even maintain his composure, so that`s why he has a pissed off look all the time.

“...Is there any way to stop him?”

Kuroyuki went on straight to the main point, as she knew that once that Blaze went berserk, this basement can`t hold against his heat and it will melt and collapse.

“Rumelia put the two of them down. Let Kronos to maintain the structure of this basement. He`s capable of controlling earth, so I guess he can control and repair this basement`s damage.”

“Understood.”

Given this situation, Rumelia willingly listens to me and untie the two of them, both of them still couldn't believe their eyes on what they have saw.

"Leave it to me."

As Kronos nudge his glasses, he squads down and placed his hand on the ground.

"CURSE YOU...!" Blaze is getting furious.

At first I decided to charge in, but I backed off after the earth elements— sands, rocks, soils, metals etc. surrounded and covers Blaze completely.

I didn't expect Kronos could control his earth elements that well. But his efforts was futile.

"GARHH!!"

Blaze's staring to went berserk. With a swing of his fist he smashes a large hole on the earth covering him.

Even though Blaze's strength was nowhere stronger than me or even Kuroyuki, but those earth elements wasn't enough to hold him down.

"...Freeze."

Kuroyuki freezes Blaze, but her ice went evaporated immediately.

"It's no use, he has an armour of cloaked flames that was immune towards your ice." I said to her.

Kuroyuki was unsatisfied, she continue to freeze Blaze over and over again.

"ENOUGH!! BURN!!"

Blaze envelope himself in blue flames, burning up. The basement heated like an oven in an instant.

Rumelia tries to bind Blaze with his strings but it burned off, Persia attacks Blaze with her cards but it bounced off.

Why are they still holding back...? What is causing them to do so...?

August knew that his wind can't be used here as he knew it will enlarge Blaze's flames, making it worse.

Kuroyuki's eyes narrowed. I sensed something from her that was not right.

"Don't do it!!"

SMACK!

I chopped her head.

"...Eh?"

“What are you doing?! The basement can’t hold against sudden change in temperature!!”

The basement itself was fragile, I realize as soon as I smash the ground earlier was enough to make the whole basement shake. That also means that the basement was easy to crumble if there was intense change with the temperature.

“...You chopped my head.”

Kuroyuki looks at me, looking irritated and annoyed.

“At times like this— that’s what you were concerned?!”

If it’s isn’t for Kronos who’s maintaining the structure of this building, it would have collapse from Blaze’s heat already!

“My strings aren’t effective on him.” Rumelia said, while trying to bind Blaze with more of her strings.

How can we stop him...? I got it!

“Hey Blaze! Come here!”

“SILENCE YOU LOWLY HUMAN!”

Blaze charge towards me at a high speed, his flames was focused and compressed on his right hand, it was huge. And really, just how on earth much do you hate me?

As expected from Kuroyuki, she knew what I was planning. Both of us evade away from Blaze and reached behind Blaze.

“YOU...!”

Without letting Blaze to react, both of us gave him a kick on his back.

He flew towards the black sword. Seeing what he wanted was right in front of him, he reach out his hands, but...

“ARGHH!!!!!!??”

Both of his arms broke when he touched the black sword. He’s a half-phoenix, I’m sure it will heal completely by time.

“DAMN IT—ACK!?”

Before Blaze could even finish recover, I gave a chop on Blaze’s carotid pulse. He fainted.

“Phew... this is harder than I expected.”

Luckily this ended fast. If not his situation might be even worse if Blaze turns himself to his true form.



“Both of you really have a great teamwork you know~?”

Persia’s amazed to see both of us moved in a perfect coordination and kicked Blaze at the same time.

“I totally didn’t expected this, how do you know that he was going berserk?” August asks.

August’s still confused about the situation, he didn’t expect that Blaze has a power to this extend that was able to be nearly on par with Kuroyuki.

What’s more, he was only half-berserk. That means his powers still have some of them hidden.

“His eyes. You noticed that it turns into a dragon eyes right?”

“...You are quite knowledgeable.”

Seems that Kuroyuki knew that too.

“How surprising, thank you.”

Kronos doesn’t seemed right, as he was still placing his hands on the ground.

“What happened?”

Rumelia walks towards Kronos that has a stiff expression with cold sweat dripping.

“I don’t know what elements that the black rock is...”

Kronos was analysing this basement earth elements. He’s depressed the fact he doesn’t know what was the element of the black rock— that the black sword was stabbed on.

“I want to extract it and analyse it...!”

“What are you doing? Getting obsessed over a rock.”

“Ow, it hurts.”

Rumelia mercilessly smacks Kronos head.

“I guess it’s time to pull out the sword then.” I mumbled.

Now it’s time for the second trap, the gravity magic.

By the way, Blaze was sent to the infirmary after Persia calls assistance to pick him up.

The workers cheered for us and gave us a blessing like ‘Good luck.’ They must have gotten permission from the principal.

.....How carefree of them. We just fought a half-berserk dragon here.

I pulled up my sleeves and breathe in deeply...

.....Go!

“GRRRRRAAGGGHHHHH!!!”

I felt nothing but pain from the strain. My muscles contracted vigorously the moment I grabbed the sword with both of my hands.

The ground, where I stood on was sinking and cracking with a large sound.

But yet, the sword finally lifted slowly little by little.

The black sword is out from the gravity magic and it turn lighter very soon.

“Yes— Whoa...?”

Because it was too sudden, my body can't adjust in time. It sent the whole sword and sheath flying up and backwards, stabbed on the ceiling of the basement.

“...Are you an idiot?” Kuroyuki said.

I'm really exhausted— physically and mentally. The first thing I heard after my success was not a compliment, but rather an insult.

“Can't you at least congratulate me from pulling out the sword?!”

My whole body was aching like crazy. It's been some time I have used such strength.

“...Un. Congratulations. Now please take that sword down.” Kuroyuki said.

“...I'm not happy at all.” I complained to her.

Now that I pulled out the sword, everything should have ended quite well. But... what's with this feeling of 'danger' from the sword?

“Erm... guys? What is that...?” Persia said with a freaked out expression.

There's black liquid coming out from the hole of the black rock. It's not water or bubble gasses...

It's the danger I'm feeling.

All six of us quickly increase our distance away from the black liquid.

“Let's get out of here.”

August suggest that we should escape, but...

“The entrance was sealed by a black mist...!”

Something black like smoke covered the entrance of the basement. But yet it isn't getting dark at all.

"Hup...!"

August quickly dash towards the black mist covering the entrance, and swings his sword.

CLANG! CLANG! CLANG!

"What the...! This thing is hard...!"

No matter how many times he tried, his attacks bounced off. August decided to give up and sheathed his sword.

Seems to me, the black mist is some sort of very hard wall— like a barrier hard to break through with physical attacks.

"This must be dark magic."

Persia fuses her card with pure white light, she threw it towards the black mist.

CLANG!

Although the light dispelled some of the black mist, but yet it isn't able to penetrate through.

"...there are two barriers. One is a magic barrier but I'm not sure about the black wall." Persia explained, while controlling her card back to her.

".....another trap."

Kuroyuki was certain that this was another trap. It's the third trap.

"That means to escape, we need to defeat those things."

Rumelia said as she points at the black liquid. All of us saw the black liquid from the hole is starting to maintain several forms.

This looks bad, I better grab the sword first...!

"Hup...!"

I jumped up to the ceiling and grabbed the black sword. It's stuck pretty tightly, I wiggled it but it isn't moving at all.

"Erm... Kronos would you please?"

I hanged up there like an idiot, my hands refuses to let go of the sword.

Kronos pressed his hand on the ground, trying to move the structure of the basement.

"What...!? I can't move it!" He cried while looking up towards me.

“Huh...?”

“This whole basement was covered by this black stuff! It’s restricting me from moving the earth elements structure!” He shouted.

Oh shit. This is way worse than I thought. I was going to make a hole on the wall so we can escape... But it was covered completely by the black mist.

So in other words, we are trapped inside a box.

“Tch...!”

I balance myself by pinning my legs on the ceiling.

I forcefully pulled harder. And finally I’m able to pull the black sword out with a large hole on the ceiling, and successfully made my landing.

The hole that I made is covered by the black mist in an instant.

Speaking of which, the black stuff that was flowing out from the hole maintained their forms. Surprisingly, it was...

“.....! Aren’t those our shadows!?” August cried.

There are six shadows.

It’s the shadow of us that currently still remains inside the basement.

Not giving us much time to prepare, Rumelia’s shadow pulled out two hundred puppets from mid-air in an instant. All of the black puppets was made out by the black liquid.

“Same as my ability.”

I can’t feel any element of surprise or shock from Rumelia’s words. She’s emotionless.

With haste, August’s shadow is unsheathing a black sword.

“That shadow has the same looking thing as my sword...!”

August gritted his teeth while looking annoyed. By the way, shouldn’t he realize already that the shadow he’s looking at is him?

Kronos’s shadow squats there touching the ground.

Persia’s shadow was taking out four black cards, holding it between her fingers on her right hand.

I don’t care about them, or rather, I couldn’t care less about them. I’m concerned was— mine and Kuroyuki Shiroha’s shadow.

The moment I start to worry, Kuroyuki’s shadow extended her hand fingers pointed towards me. It shoots a large amount of black things— similar like snow and howls towards me.

“WHOA?”

Reflexively, I swing the sheathed black sword, it repels away the black stuffs and it disappear soon.

I can't unsheathe it...! What on earth is happening...?

The shadows started their assault.

Persia's shadow threw her c—

TING! CLANG! CLANG! (The sound of me blocking the cards)

THAT WAS DANGEROUS!! WHAT'S WITH THAT INSANE SPEED!? IF IT'S ISN'T FOR MY INSTINCT I WOULD HAVE DIED!!

The shadow puppets suddenly attacks me in a fast speed. I smash them with the sword, they disappeared.

WHAT'S WITH THAT!? WHY DID THEY SUDDENLY AND ONLY ATTACKS ME!?

The ground below me started to vibrate intensely. Black spikes pierce upwards. I break the spikes with my kicks.

KRONOS'S EARTH CONTROLLING SKILL!?

Large amount of spears spike forth towards me. I blocked most of them with the sheathed sword.

KUROYUKI'S SPEAR SHOOTING TECHNIQUE!?

What the...? What's with this black mist...?

All of the sudden there are black mist limiting my vision. Two shadows with a sword approach in front of me, swinging their sword towards me.

One is aiming for my neck and the other one is aiming on my stomach. I quickly blocked both of their attacks at the same time with the sheathed sword.

I drew out my strength and pushed them backwards.

ISN'T THAT AUGUST'S AND NIGHTMARE'S SWORD TECHNIQUE!? WHEN DID THE TWO OF THEM HAVE SUCH PERFECT TEAMWORK AND COORDINATION!?

“Huh... Aren't they quite strong?” August said.

He stood way behind me with his arms folded. Enjoying my fight, as if it's watching an action movie in a cinema.

“Agreed.” Kronos replied to August.

He's standing beside August, while searching for a weapon from his item storage magic circle.

Those five aren't fighting at all. But even so, the shadow only aims at me. Why only towards me?

"Because you are holding the black sword." "...You are holding the black sword."

Persia and Kuroyuki answered the question that was circulating in my head for some time. Did the both of them read my mind?

I'm so tired. Can't those shadows stop already...?

"CAN'T THE FIVE OF YOU HELP ME ALREADY!?"

"...Freeze." Kuroyuki whispered.

All of the shadows went frozen in an instant, but—

Black strings shoots out from the inside and cuts the ice.

Two shadows break the ice with their sword.

A black spear dropped from mid-air and cuts Kuroyuki's ice like butter.

Kuroyuki's shadow breaks the ice with raw strength.

The shadow cards that was still floating in mid-air shoots back and cuts the ice.

They are capable to free themselves from Kuroyuki's ice. Kuroyuki can't help but to be surprised by such a scene.

"...The four of you really are holding back after all."

As she said, she glared towards those four— Persia, Rumelia, August and Kronos.

"You shouldn't doubt Nightmare..." I mumbled to Kuroyuki.

"Eh...? Nightmare? Are you referring to yourself?"

Persia heard my mumble, then she asks me curiously.

Because of Persia's question, everyone is looking at me with a confused look. Except Rumelia, even though she's looking at me, but she's expressionless.

"...Ah. About that..."

"...this guy here has a split personality."

As I hesitated about on what I should have said, Kuroyuki simply answered it for me.

"Tch...!"

I'm too overly focus on this situation, I'm caught off guard. August's shadow suddenly appeared in front of me, launching consecutive attacks.

Luckily his speed is slower than mine, it gave me more than enough time to react. I blocked his first three stabbing attacks, and warded off two slashing attacks.

I swung the sheathed sword for his throat with a fast speed.

CLANK!

“Ugh...! Nightmare...!” I uttered.

Nightmare`s shadow suddenly appeared behind August`s shadow— it diverted my attack with his sword...!

With haste, the two of them skipped back and jumped sideways. A large amount of black mist hurls forth towards me.

It`s hard to tell what it is, but it`s coming from Kuroyuki`s and Kronos`s shadow.

I saw something black penetrating through the black mist. Oh no, it`s too late to block them all...!

TING! THUNK! THUNK!

Thank goodness Persia intercepts the black cards with her cards. If she didn`t, I would have suffered from a serious injury.

Now to deal with the black mist...! It`s too much, I can`t clear it in time to protect them—

“What are you doing!? Just slash it!” August shouted.

Thanks to August that managed to reach in time, both of us slash and clear the black mist with our weapons.

After it blown away and disappear, several black puppets charges at August with intent to kill.

“What!? Why me?” August shouts with a shocked tone.

He slices several puppets as he evades the attacks.

Rumelia opens many magic circles and immobilize the black puppets with her strings. Kuroyuki freezes the rest of the puppets with her ice.

“Single Sword Skill— Unsheathed Sword Chained Strike!”

I took this chance to charge in and destroy all the puppets as I ran.

Suddenly, I find this rather amazing.

“That`s awesome!! Why don`t we work as a team in the tournament?” I said to them.

“””””No way.””””” “...No.”

The five of them refuse immediately. Even Persia too, why...? Even though our teamwork suddenly skyrocketed...

“Oh no, not good.” I mumbled.

August`s and Nightmare`s shadow swung their swords for my neck and stomach again.

I tried to unsheathe the black sword, but no matter how hard I tried—it won`t budge at all.

Come on...! I need a dual wielding style to counter it...!

Acknowledged.

...Huh?

BAM!

The sword suddenly unsheathed. Because I have been trying to pull it out for a while, I used too much strength. It makes me inadvertently draw it out and swing the sword with a huge force.

The two shadows can`t withstand this attack. It knocked them backwards, making them stumble on the ground.

It`s a double-edge sword. Nice...!

Come to think of it, did the sword just... talked to me...?

“WHOA!!!?”

Nightmare`s shadow...!? What on earth is with this aggressiveness...!?

I blocked the ‘Silent Blade’ sword skill with the sheath on the left—

“...Look out!”

Kuroyuki took her spear and blocked August`s shadow attack from behind me, then she repels that shadow with her spear stabbing attacks.

Nightmare`s shadow quickly retreated from his position, revealing a large amount of black mist hurling towards both of us.

“Kuroyuki.” I said.

“...Un.”

Kuroyuki created a large ice wall, blocking the black mist.

A shadow took a scythe and cuts through Kuroyuki`s ice like butter. Is it Kronos...?

It can`t hold long at this rate— Eh?



August`s, Kuroyuki`s and Nightmare`s shadow joined in. All of them swung their weapons and destroyed Kuroyuki`s ice wall.

The moment the wall is destroyed, Persia`s shadow took four cards and threw them towards me.

Not this time...!

I deflected the black cards with the sword.

The four shadows advance forth to attack us.

“Rumelia!”

I called out to Rumelia and she understood immediately.

“Open.”

She activates several magic circles and binds the four shadows with her strings.

Persia`s shadow quickly cuts the strings with her black cards to free those four shadows.

August`s, Nightmare`s and Kuroyuki`s shadow quickly took a leap and attacks with their weapons.

I blocked Nightmare`s and August`s shadow attacks. Nightmare`s shadow locked my left leg with his left leg, and August`s shadow grabs my right hand with his left hand.

Kuroyuki`s shadow have her spear stabbing through the gaps towards my abdomen.

Oh no, there`s not enough time to repel them and block her attack...!

“...I won`t let you.” Kuroyuki whispered.

She took her spear and pinned down her shadow`s attack to the ground, and immediately reach out her right grip on her shadow`s right hand.

Her shadow counters with a left grip on her left shoulder.

“...I can`t move.” She said to me.

We are stuck, everyone is prevented to move. Even though I can push them back, but I feared that Nightmare`s shadow will aim for Kuroyuki the moment he`s free. All we can do now is to wait for reinforcements to save us.

Persia`s position is too hard to hit the shadows, she`s dealing with Rumelia`s puppets too.

Rumelia`s dealing with Persia`s and her own shadow puppets with her puppets.

“...Lucifer! Careful...!”

Persia called out to me. Because the reinforcements from the other side has arrived — it`s Kronos`s shadow.

Kronos`s shadow took a sword and stabs from the middle of the gaps.

“You aren`t going to die here!”

August shouted, who landed his sword blow vertically downwards from above, pinning down Kronos`s shadow sword.

Kronos`s shadow took a scythe and slice August`s neck, but August stopped the attack with his sword.

He then quickly grabs Kronos`s shadow arm and scythe together with his left hand.

Kronos`s shadow wrapped his right heel with the black sand.

“Not good. I can`t move my right leg at all.” He said.

The situation`s even worse now. Either of us will die if we move.

All other attacks from Rumelia`s shadow`s puppet are being countered by the other two girls.

But, the same goes for us too. None of the attacks from the outside has been able to land of either of us.

“Hurry up and do something! Aren`t you the one that`s best at this?” August shouted.

Who is he referring to...? Anyways, there`s still one more guy that can help us to escape from this.

“Finally, you showed up.” I said.

“Sorry. It`s a bit hard to deal with them.” Kronos replied.

His left hand nudges his glasses as he slices some of Rumelia`s shadow`s puppets and make his way here.

“Who?” Kronos asks, as he knocks off several puppets with his scythe.

“Kuroyuki, of course.” I replied.

He approach near to me and swing his scythe for Kuroyuki`s shadow.

Yes, we can finally—

“Oi! Be careful!” August yelled, as if he`s trying to warn Kronos.

A black thin coat covered Kuroyuki`s shadow, it stopped Kronos`s scythe. Kronos`s scythe was coated with a black layer, making his right hand unmovable.

“Ow. Not good, I can`t move either.” Kronos said to me.

Nightmare`s shadow then grabbed Kronos`s left shoulder with his right hand.

"...What should we do now...?" Kuroyuki asks, she looks nervous about our situation.

"I'm probably the only one that's able to move right now." I said to them.

"Then? Why don't you move?" August said to me, while exerting his strength to press Kronos's shadow's scythe down.

"I can only push your shadow away. But once he's free, he'd probably aim for you first." I replied to August.

"Yes, my left leg is stuck." He said.

"...I can freeze the black sand on his leg. This will allow him to move his leg, at least." Kuroyuki said to me.

She can't freeze August's shadow because it's too close to us. Her ice will definitely hurt us.

"Kronos's shadow would probably cut you with his scythe. From the look of it, it's able to cut through your ice armour." I reply to Kuroyuki.

"...In that case, you need to free me from my own shadow's grip. Or else I can't evade it." She said, while looking at her shadow's hand.

"If I did that, your shadow will stab me with her spear." I said to her.

"I will deal with your shadow." August said to me.

"I can buy some time for you with my scythe, I modified it a little." Kronos said to me.

"...Then, should we start?" Kuroyuki questions me.

"No, it's not good enough." I said.

"What on earth do you want? Isn't it good enough already just to escape from this?"

August said, but yet his tone isn't being irritated. It's as if, he believed that I can do better than just letting them get away.

"Persia!" I shouted.

"Hah...! What is it?"

Persia heard my voice and replied, as she slice some of the black puppets with her card.

"Look for a right time and throw your card to hit August's shadow! We will probably die if you are unable to hit him! So I have placed all of my hope to you!" I shouted.

Nightmare's shadow will probably dodge the card and Kuroyuki's shadow has an armour that's capable to rebound her cards. Kronos's shadow is too hard to hit since August and Kuroyuki are blocking her way.

So the only option left is August's shadow, who will be wide open after our escape.

"I definitely won't let you down~!" She said, while giving me a confident smile.

"...I see. That's what you were planning." Kuroyuki said to me with a smile.

"Not bad. This would work." August said.

"Ready as you are." Kronos said to me.

Actually... the shadows can't hear anything... right? It's a gamble actually, but we don't have much choice.

I breathe in.

"...Go!" I shouted.

I push August's shadow back by swinging my right arm with a large strength. As expected, he quickly swing his sword towards August.

"...Freeze."

Kuroyuki whispered, she froze the black sand along with August's right ankle.

"Ow, cold...! Cheh!" August cried.

Releasing his hand from Kronos's shadow, he quickly evade his shadow's blade by leaping sideways.

Kronos's shadow swung the scythe for Kuroyuki's neck.

I quickly knock away Kuroyuki's shadow's hand away from her left shoulder with my right elbow.

Kuroyuki quickly release her grip and dodge the scythe by hairbreadth. Her shadow immediately broke free from Kronos's scythe and thrusts her black spear towards me with a fast speed.

August swung his sword vertically downwards for Nightmare's shadow, aiming for his hand and leg that was locking me and Kronos.

Nightmare's shadow quickly retreated himself by taking back his hand and leg, I added a boost by pushing him back with my sheath.

"Tch!"

Kronos manage to knock Kuroyuki's shadow's black spear away with his scythe.

"There...!"

After slicing two black puppets with her card, Persia threw three of it towards August's shadow. Even though August's shadow blocked the first two cards, but the third card hit his arm— he disappeared with a 'poof' sound.

Huh...? It disappeared that easily...? If that`s the case...

“Don`t stop!” I shouted.

“...Frozen Blade.”

Kuroyuki forged a sword on a right hand, she swings it— a violent burst of cold air in a shape of a crescent moon hurled forth.

Nightmare`s shadow evaded, Kuroyuki`s shadow evaded—

“Don`t let your shadow move, Kronos!” I shouted.

Kronos quickly activates a magic circle. He pulls out a metal baseball bat and hits his shadow like a baseball.

His shadow blocked the bat with the black scythe, but he`s pushed backwards— it rammed directly into Kuroyuki`s cold air and freezes.

Kronos hits the frozen shadow once more with the bat, it crumbles and nothing was left in it.

“Alright, four to go.” I said, as I make my way towards Rumelia`s shadow.

A mountain of black puppets blocks my way. Just how on earth much can she pull out!?

“Dual Wielding Sword Arts— Dual Slashing Stream!”

I pick up my speed and ran forward.

Here comes... Slice, slice, slash, cut, slice, slash, cut, slash, slice, slice, slash, cut...

The black puppets disappeared at a fast speed, some of them flew far away and disappears as they hit the ground.

This continues until I sliced more than a hundred of them, until...

“Wow!?” I cried.

CLANG! CLANK! CLANG! CLANG! CLANG! CLANK! CLANK! BAM!

Kuroyuki`s shadow shows up, she thrust her spear seven times like lightning and knocks me back with her black ice sword.

“Tsk...!” I gritted my teeth.

CLANK!!!

Nightmare`s shadow joined in too, he slices me with the ‘Silent Blade’ skill but I warded it with my sword.

Kuroyuki`s shadow thrust her black spear. A thin gust of black air hurls to me as it leaves traces of black ice along the way.

“Single Sword Skill— Full Swing!”

I disperse the air with my sword blow.

“Anyone to lend a hand here?” I shouted.

“...Already did.” Kuroyuki replied, as she appears in front of me.

She shoots her endless spear for Rumelia`s shadow. There`s not much black puppets left for her.

August and Kronos are dealing with Nightmare`s shadow.

Persia added a boost on her cards by fusing pure white lights into her cards. She threw it straight for Rumelia`s shadow.

Rumelia controls some of her puppets to force a way open along with Kuroyuki spears, allowing Persia`s cards to pass through.

Black mist...? Kuroyuki`s shadow...!

“Don`t worry~! It will definitely pierce through~!” Persia shouted to me in confidence.

Oh...? It really does pierce through the black puppets and the black wall—

CLINK! TING! TING! CLINK!

Kuroyuki`s shadow interrupted Persia`s card by shooting her black spears.

“.....Ah.” Persia`s mouth was left hanging open. Why I`m not surprised?

“Kuroyuki.” I said.

“...Pierce.” Kuroyuki whispered.

Her spear pierced through Rumelia`s shadow. Rumelia`s shadow and her black puppets disappeared.

“Hah... hah... so tired.” Persia panted.

“Oi! It`s not the time to relax!” I shouted as I ran quickly to Persia.

“Eh? W-What are you doing... my heart is not ready...”

She mumbles and blushes as I ran closer and closer to her.

“You idiot!”

I pounced to her, wrapping her in my arms and rolled away— from her own shadow black cards.

"...Lucifer...!" Kuroyuki hurriedly ran to us.

"What... happened...?" Persia murmured.

Curse it... It turns out to be an exchange. My back is stabbed by some of her shadow's black cards...

"No, no, no, no...! You are hurt!" Persia cried in a shaky voice. Her expression is in full of shock.

"...Don't move...!" Kuroyuki cried.

Kuroyuki rushed to me and slowly remove the cards stabbed on my back.

"Ow. Rumelia— ow, cover us for a while." I said.

"Understood." She said. Shielding us by placing a strong defence with her puppets around us.

Kuroyuki seals my wounds with her ice.

"...It's because of you... he...!" Kuroyuki uttered, with a shaky tone.

Tears gathered on the corner of her eyes, as if they were about to fall off. She raised her hand, it's trying to slap Persia.

"...I'm sorry... I'm really sorry..." Persia says in a shaky voice. Crying out as she rubs her tears.

"Stop being exaggerating. I'm fine." I said to them, with a smile.

"How is it... possible?" Persia utters, with an unbelievable expression on her face.

I know what she meant. She could probably slice through my back if she's at all out power.

"Those shadow aren't at their full strength, just like you guys. They can't really kill us if we go serious, but they can still hurt us." I said.

"Thank goodness you are fine... Thank goodness...!" Persia hugged me tight, as she burst into tears.

"Geez, it's not time to worry about this."

I muttered, patting her head and hug her slightly— trying to comfort her from her guilt.

"Thanks, Kuroyuki." I said, with a smile.

"...Un."

I patted her head too, to comfort her.

"Lucifer, I can't hold out long." Rumelia said emotionlessly.

Oh no, Kuroyuki's shadow is breaking through.

We need to somehow destroy Persia's shadow. Her cards have been interrupting our attacks all this time. But yet... something's else on my mind.

"Alright then..... Here goes." After I told them my plan, I stood up and charge straight for Kuroyuki's shadow.

This will probably be costly on my back.

"Single Sword Skill— Ten-Fold Slash!"

I swung the blade horizontally, drawing out a power and strength ten times stronger than the 'Full Swing'.

WHAM!

Huh? She dodged it...! What a waste...!

I was expecting this attack to hit her, but instead— the shockwave that howls forth disrupted Persia's shadow's black cards that was floating on mid-air.

"Okay, both of you can shoot now!" I shouted.

Persia and Kuroyuki shoots their weapons towards Persia's shadow. It disappeared.

And... two to go.

Ow! My back hurts...!



"Damn it, what's with you...!" August muttered.

After blocking the sword strike from Nightmare's shadow, he was pushed back. It seems he realize the difference between the shadow and me.

Kuroyuki is dealing with her own shadow.

"Oof...!"

Just before August is going to hit the wall, I quickly run forward and caught him with my hand.

"What's with this overwhelming difference!? Your fighting styles are totally different...!" He said.

As I helped him to steady himself, we stand by the side and observe Nightmare's shadow. Where Kronos is dealing with him alone.

"Like I said, that shadow isn't me." I replied to him while giving him an awkward look.

"Even though you have the power and speed, but you don't have the skills. The complete opposite of him." He muttered.

His judgement is completely correct. Nightmare does have the skill but not power and speed.

"Oi hurry up and catch him too...!" August cried.

I reached out my hand and caught the flying Kronos, then gently place him down on the ground.

"Phew. Thanks." Kronos said.

"He's coming." I said.

Nightmare's shadow swings the sword for Kronos. I reach out my sword to stop his attack—

"Oi, it's a feint!" August shouted.

Nightmare's sword trajectory suddenly changed direction and aims for my waist.

Thanks to August's warning, I block the attack with my sheath.

I quickly swing the sword on my right for Nightmare's shadow. He dodged my attack by stepping back. I picked up speed and swung the sheath on my left, but he evades it by bending his waist back.

"Faster! Or else you can't hit him at all!"

August said, as he took his sword and swings vertically for Nightmare's shadow on my left side.

Nightmare's shadow stepped back, evading August's sword. Kronos soon took a spear and thrusts in from my right.

Nightmare`s shadow knocked down Kronos`s spear with his sword and disappeared—

“Behind!” August said.

Hearing August`s warnings, I quickly turned my body and look backwards. Nightmare`s shadow sheathed his sword, this stance...!

“Place up your defence!” I shouted.

Those two heard my warnings. They quickly raise turn and raise their weapon to defend against Nightmare`s shadow`s attack.

As Nightmare`s shadow draws his sword, many thin lines appeared on mid-air around us.

“Gaaa-----!” August yelled.

All three of us blocked the attacks of the ‘Third Dimensional Slash’ from Nightmare`s shadow.

Not giving Nightmare`s shadow any time to react, I quickly ran forth. Lowering my sword around my knee height, I swung it diagonally upwards to the left.

Nightmare`s shadow evaded my blade by bending his waist slightly backwards.

I took an anticlockwise spin and swung the sheath horizontally with a backhand attack. The shadow parried the sheath upwards.

Making use of my momentum, I thrust my sword forth.

Nightmare`s shadow skids to his right, avoiding from my sword. He took a small jump and kicks my sword with his large strength, my body was unbalanced just from preventing the sword to fly away.

His strength is pretty strong, but I still manage to hold tight on the sword without letting it flew away.

“August.” I said.

Having to watch for some time, August ran towards Nightmare`s shadow. Slicing his sword horizontally for Nightmare`s abdomen.

“August! Pull back...!” Persia shouted.

August quickly stopped himself from charging in the moment Persia shouted, he skipped backwards.

Suddenly black spikes came from my right, creating a border line separating us from Nightmare`s shadow. It was Kuroyuki`s shadow who did that.

Kuroyuki`s shadow suddenly appeared in front of Nightmare`s shadow, blocking a lot of cards and spears with her black scythe.

“Jump to your right!”

As I shouted, Kronos and August did as told. I took a leap sideways, avoiding from Nightmare's shadow's 'Silent Blade Spectre'.

I'm probably the only one who can detect this attack without any problems. It's one of the most dangerous attacks of Nightmare's.

He created his own fighting style, the silent arts.

By evading attacks several times, he's capable of landing a fatal blow in one hit after he have seen his opponents style clearly.

It leaves no trace of sound and motion, you will never know when he will actually attacks during his evasion.

It will be dangerous once he's serious. Thankfully it will never happen with this shadow.

"...Burst." Kuroyuki murmured.

The ice spears that was lying on the ground of the shadow's feet exploded.

Did it hit? I wondered.

After the ice and mists cleared, nothing was left.

"Oi! Behind you!" August shouted.

As I heard, I quickly turned behind. I saw Nightmare's shadow thrusting the sword forth and swinging the sheath with a dagger wielding technique.

I blocked the sheath with my sword and parried the sword with the sheath. Kuroyuki's shadow is here too? A black spear...! Shit, I'm going to be stabbed—

CLANK!

Kuroyuki came from my right, and knocks her shadow's spear down with a sword.

"...I got your back." She whispers to me, as she took a quick glance on me.

"August, Kronos!" I called out.

Those two quickly took their weapons for the shadow as they heard my voice.

"Ugh...! What is this...?" Kronos muttered.

The ground is suddenly filled with black mist— enough to cover our ankle, restraining our feet to move.

"Freeze the ground too, Kuroyuki." I said.

She gives a nod and freezes the entire ground with her ice.

Kuroyuki`s shadow is trapped, but Nightmare`s shadow make his move. He took a leap backwards, and disappeared suddenly.

I will leave Kuroyuki`s shadow to August and Kronos...

“Persia!” I yelled.

Persia, who`s been resting at the side-lines for some time under Rumelia`s protection, threw her cards when she heard my signal.

Before the cards can reach, I break the ice on my legs and look behind.

Nightmare`s sword is going to swing down for my shoulder, but Persia`s cards interrupted him.

Huh, he`s still able to dodge it?

“Rumelia!” I yelled again.

Rumelia activated a magic circle and pulls out strings, circulating Nightmare`s shadow.

He cut the strings...? Oh, two strings tangled on his foot and left arm...

I swung my sword horizontally for his abdomen— Nightmare`s shadow bent his waist and dodged the slice from my sword.

What the? He`s still able to evade that?

“Kuroyuki.” I said.

Kuroyuki froze Nightmare`s shadow. This is the last backup plan that I have. I swing the sword violently and vertically downwards, smashing the ice to pieces.

Nothing was left but ice that crumbles and shatters.

Oh...? Kronos and August defeated Kuroyuki`s shadow.

Finally, we can get out of here.

...I hope.

We finally defeated the last two shadows. Even though it took some unexpectedly long time but... I'm glad that we ended up without any casualties.

...Except for my back, but it's no big deal.

What's with this feeling... It's way worse compared to before.

The exit is still remained shut tight by the black mist wall.

"Huh? Shouldn't the entrance should be opened by now after we defeated those shadows?" August said.

August hits the wall several times with his sword, but it's just the same as before.

What about the black sword...? I'm pretty sure it said 'Acknowledged' to me when I tried to unsheathe the black sword.

I tried to communicate with the black sword on my hand, but there aren't any response. Is it just my imagination all along...?

"The signal's jammed." Persia said, as she tries to contact the workers on her window.

The signal must be blocked completely by this black wall. Not good.

"Guys, look." Kronos said.

All of us look towards the rock where the sword was stabbed. Some black liquid flows out from the black rock.

".....There's still another one." Kuroyuki said to me as she tap my shoulder.

There's only one shadow, but yet the shadow was—

"It was... me?" I said in confusion.

I can't shake off this uneasy feeling about my shadow. This shadow doesn't feels like me... or Nightmare's.

"Tsk. I will finish this quickly."

With that said, August dash forward by taking his sword in a sword drawing style.

The moment he swings his sword for the shadow that just formed—

"Whoa, hey!"

The shadow dodged swiftly and spoke.

Eh? It talked...? IT TALKED!!?

This shadow... has the exact same voice as mine.

"Calm down will ya? Don't just go and swing your weapon towards a harmless shadow." He said.

August calmly sheathed his sword, and slowly move backwards back to us.

Even though it's just a shadow, but it can be seen he's scratching his head, as he looks around.

"Ah, there you are? As expected from me." He said.

By 'you', is he referring to... me?

"You probably guessed who am I the moment you saw me, don't you?" The shadow said in a confident tone.

"You are me, aren't you. The 'real' me." I replied.

"Yes, I am the real you. Lucifer Nightwalker von Nightmare's actual personality." He said.

"...!"

Everyone's expression turned stiff the moment they hear that, except Rumelia.

The moment I hear this, the feeling in my chest stirred up suddenly. The feeling of 'wrongness' is getting stronger.

"Ah... Don't worry about it. I'm not an 'enemy', for now...." The shadow said.

The moment everyone hear that, they laid down their weapons.

"Here's a few answers to clear your doubts, Lucifer." He said.

The shadow took a slight pause, and started to speak.

"I'm not the mysterious person who sent you those message." He said.

I see... So that's not an email sent from the past.

"I don't know how to release your seal." The shadow continued.

"Too bad. I was expecting you to know how to do it..." I replied.

"Oh...? So you are the 'stupid' one with the stupid personality?" The shadow said.

"...WHAT THE HELL IS WITH YOU!" I yelled.

"Ahaha, my bad. It feels really weird to talk with only half of my personality. Anyways, I know nothing about the black sword."

Everyone can't help but to feel awkward from the carefree attitude from the shadow. Same as Nightmare.

.....Can't you give me a better information?

"Here's one valuable information, the principal is a really sly fox. So you need to outsmart him." He said.

".....That's all!?" I protested.

"You know what I meant." The shadow replied confidently.

...I have no idea what he's talking about at all. There's so many hidden meanings behind his words. It will be tiring to analyse all of his words.

"Anyways, it seems some of you have questions to ask." The shadow said.

"...Have we met before...?" Kuroyuki asks with a desperate look.

"Oh my, such a beauty you are. But sorry, we never met before. And in fact, I never met all of you before." He said.

"How interesting... Why do I have a feeling of seeing you before...? Even though I'm sure I have never seen you before." The shadow said to Kuroyuki.

He suddenly approach and stopped in front of Kuroyuki. He's so fast...!

"...!" Kuroyuki visibly flinched.

The shadow reach his hand for Kuroyuki's head, but yet Kuroyuki did not resisted. She silently stood there, staring at the black shadow with a puzzled expression. She looked pained as she did her best to hold back her emotions, biting her lips.

The moment the shadow started to stroke her head, Kuroyuki blushed, but only a little.

"You are really sweet, you know that?" The shadow said.

The shadow soon slowly stepped backwards, and looked at the others.

"Anyways, all of you seemed strong and seemed familiar. But if I follow the current strength that you have... The strongest one will be that guy."

The shadow pointed at August. But August did not refute. Instead, he looks at me with a sceptical, puzzled and confused look.

"But if it's actual strength, the strongest one will be you, Lucifer. The second will be that beauty, the seal of hers is one of the top-class seals too." The shadow continued.

"That guy there will be the third, the forth is the cute girl with the blonde hair. The fifth is the emotionless girl and the last is that guy with the glasses. But... these last two will be the strongest fighting against a large number of enemies, though."

Everyone remained silent, not even a word was leaked out from their mouths.

“Ah... one last thing. I`m just a recording from the past that`s able to talk with you now. All of you should know... that with your current state, you can`t defeat me.”

The atmosphere suddenly tensed up when the shadow said so.

“And so... please survive. If possible, I don`t wish to kill all of you.” The shadow said in a sad tone.

A sword appeared out from his waist, he then unsheathed the sword. His stance looks calm, but yet I can feel a lot of murderous intent from him.

But yet— I can`t feel anything from his sword. As if, the sword itself... doesn`t exist.

Everyone quickly prepared themselves by taking out their weapons. Scattering ourselves in a suitable space.

“Ready...?”

As soon as the shadow said, he disappeared and stopped in front of August.

“Sorry, but I need to crush you first.” The shadow said.

After the shadow took a small step, he disappeared and appeared behind August, sheathing his sword.

“ARGHHHHHHHH!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!?”

...Everything happened so fast. August was attacked in an instant.

The shadow landed a final attack on his stomach, sending him flying backwards and rolled on the floor several times.

“(Coughs)... W-what.....on earth... are you ... BUARGHHH!!”

August lies lifelessly on the ground and he coughs out blood. His shoulder, ribs, left arm and right leg of his bones were broken.

“Don`t worry, he won`t die that easily.” The shadow said.

August fainted soon. It`s clear that he`s still alive, but we don`t have much time to save him...

Everyone`s expression turned stiff and pale except Rumelia.

That shadow is far too abnormally strong, far beyond my expectations.

The shadow disappeared. He suddenly stands in front of Kronos and landing a strike vertically downwards with the sheath on his left hand.

Kronos reached out his spear to block the attack.

“Guh---”



It turns out to be a feint, the suddenly shadow stabs his sword on Kronos`s abdomen.

“Single Sword First Dimensional Arts— Silent Blade.”

After a thin white light flashes in a straight line, Kronos kneels down with his wound gushing out blood. He lies down and fainted.

“...Ah. I might have used a little too much.” The shadow said.

Rumelia is on her way to Kronos. Before Rumelia could even reach him— she`s down immediately.

“Ku...!”

That shadow hits Rumelia her on her oesophagus, solar plexus and carotid pulse in a flash, less than a second. Knocking her out almost immediately.

I saw several cards flying towards the shadow in a fast speed.

PAK! PLAK! SLAP! PAK!

He caught all four cards with his left hand.

“If you fused your cards with your pure white light, perhaps I would have disappeared.” The shadow said.

He threw the cards back to Persia, accurate enough that it`s possible to cut through her fatal spots.

CLANG! CLANK! CLANG! CLANK!

I managed to make it in time and blocked the cards with the sheath and sword.

“...I expected this. But too bad, you aren`t fast enough.” The shadow said.

When did he...?

“Ugh...!”

Persia was knocked out from behind by the shadow. I was going to slice him with the sword, but yet—

...he was unfazed, not moving away from my sword even the slightest.

Reluctantly, I stopped my blade just before it reaches him.

“Correct judgement. Hmm... everyone has fainted.” The shadow said.

Is he planning this from the start...?

“Haha, sorry about that. I did planned this from the start, I need to have a private talk with you.” He said.

"What about her...?" I asked.

The shadow didn't attack Kuroyuki. She's unharmed. But Kuroyuki never plan to attack him from the start.

"Sorry about that, beauty. Can you seal their wounds like you did to him?" The shadow said.

Kuroyuki gives a nod and went to seal August's wounds.

"Aren't you two close? I mean... she's the one who bring you here isn't it? And besides, both of you are special students aren't you?" The shadow whispered to me.

"...How did you—"

"Your clothes. I expect nothing less from you. And besides, I did some research." The shadow said confidently.

"By the way, your little sis is still stronger than me though. Such a sweet little sis, caring for his own brother's dignity." His voice seems happy.

"You sure are lucky, together in a room with such a beautiful girl. But too bad, you don't know how to interact properly with other people other than your little sis, magical pet and your pets." He said, with his voice seeming depressed.

"Well... so do I, we did feel a little lonely for six years after all. But... since we never get a chance to taste the essence of 'youth'. Why not enjoy it? After all, we don't have much time for 'youth' either. But as ideal as it may be, you still need to be cautious—"

The shadow started walk and look around.

"Hah... I worried too much. Seems to me you already sparked quite an enjoyable life for 'youth'." He said.

"...But, why did you said so...?" I replied.

"These guys here, they believed you more than you believed in them. Or else, they would have blamed you for bringing them here the moment that black wall appeared. They even brought their own weapons as they came here, they knew it themselves."

The shadow took a small huff, as he turned back and looks at me.

"...Especially her." He said.

...Kuroyuki?

I turned my head behind—

"WHOA!? THAT FREAKS ME OUT!" I yelled.

".....You are the one scaring me." Kuroyuki utters, with a surprised look.

Kuroyuki have been standing behind me for quite some time.

"How long did you hear...?" I asked her.

"Don't worry, she stood there only for a moment." As the shadow said, he approach close to me.

"Sigh... it feels weird." The shadow mumbled, as he grabs my shoulder.

"Huh...? What is weird...?" I asked.

"Die." He uttered.

"Ack--- Gaaa----!"

He took his sword and pierce through my abdomen.

"Gaaa----hck-----!"

My eyes blankly looks at the shadow, as he slowly pulls out his sword from my abdomen.

"I see. How weak—"

"Tch...!"

As he murmurs, I grabbed his sword, preventing him to retrieve his weapon.

"...Then, I will get stronger... and cut you d—"

"What nonsense are you spouting? You are not alone anymore. No matter how strong you get, there's always a limit in doing it alone. Cherish them, grow stronger with them. Look behind you."

As he said, I turned my head and look at Kuroyuki. She's in full of shock.

"Look here."

I turned back in front instantly as the shadow told me too.

Huh...? Is he going to punch me—?

"Wrong. It's the sword." The shadow said.

BAM!

The shadow violently punched the sword with an insane amount of strength. The sword pierced through my back from my abdomen.

"Gh----!"

Huh...? Even though blood is gushing out, but it's not really that painful. I can still fight...!

"Don't be foolish."

As the shadow said, he kicked away the sword from my hand.

I have no choice but to rely on martial arts...!

CLACK! (The sound of a spear hitting the floor)

An ice spear was thrown hard. It stabbed on the ground just below my shadow.

“GUH!?”

Kuroyuki...! She`s pulling me away from the shadow...!

“...Burst...!”

It was useless, that shadow was too fast. He kicks the spear towards me before the ice can even explode.

Kuroyuki quickly freeze my wound by touching it with her hand, preventing excessive blood loss from my body.

...It stings.

“...Are you okay...?” Kuroyuki bit her lips out of frustration.

“...Sorry.”

After the shadow said, he drive his fist into my abdomen.

“...Ngh...!”

Kuroyuki stopped his fist completely with her grip on his wrist. His fist barely touch my body.

The impact from his fist, created strong shockwaves that are being spread to the sides.

I gave the shadow an uppercut, but he avoided it by bending his neck to the sides.

“Both of you are too soft.”

The shadow suddenly pour his strength into his fist, drilling his fist into my abdomen. Even Kuroyuki`s grip can`t hold against his strength.

I absorb the shock of the impact into my knee then into my legs. I quickly grabbed his fist along with Kuroyuki.

“Not bad... Take this.”

As the shadow said, he touched my body lightly.

“.....!”

My body feels like it`s being ripped apart in the inside. My internal organs... and bones... have been crushed...?

“BUGARH...!”

...I vomited blood.

As soon as this happens, my strength is being drained quickly. My legs which have been supporting my body... soon loss their strength. And as a result, I kneeled and lied down flat on the ground.

The shadow stood beside me, where I was lying.

“Sleep.” He uttered.

BAM!

4-5

"Finally, you are awake."

I heard a voice. It's filled with anxiety, but yet rather calm.

A shadow...

...No. It's a guy... who is it...?

I sat on the ground as soon as I get up.

"Geez, you make me worry so much, you blockhead."

As he said, he chopped me on my forehead.

"Owie! ...It hurts..."

Why... am I crying...? Where... am I...?

"Hmph. Compared to a fall from a thousand meter height tree, this is nothing." The guy said.

"B-But... this guy was crying cause it couldn't get down..." The boy said.

I'm... a kid...? When did this happened...?

"Kyu! Kyu!"

Huh...? Is that... a pink coloured nine-tailed fox? Why am I holding it?

"It's certainly great that you were trying to save him... But, you need 'strength' and 'resolve'. Acting without strength is reckless, and without resolve is irresponsible. You are still young and lacking in both. While you are young, it's okay to be honest and ask for help for those around you."

As those words came across my ears, I noticed my irresponsible and reckless actions. I was the one that brought them to the basement.

If it's Nightmare... then he'd—

"...and what if no one's around?" I said.

"You give up!"

"I don't wanna!"

"Geez, how troublesome."

The guy seems vexed and sighed as he uttered those words. But yet...

...he looked straight at me as he sat closer to me.

“Then—“

He rubbed my head as gently as he could.

“...grow stronger, Lucifer. Strengthen your body and spirit. Of course... not only physically, but mentally too. Once you do that, you can save anyone you want. So until then, don't be rash, okay?”

“Okay!”

As I said, I gave him a clear bright smile, shining as bright as I could.

“Haha, indeed you are my precious son after all. Please don't let your mom know or else she will kill me...”

“DARLING? WHAT HAPPENED?”

A young lady with a set of beautiful black suddenly charges from the corner and grabbed the guy I was talking to.

“No, honey! I-It's not what you think...!”

Huh... is that you, dad...?

Dad...!

I opened my eyes.

Is it a dream...? But... it feels so real... No. It's real. I'm sure of it.

Where am I...?

I found myself lying on a very comfy white bed. This must be the infirmary room that was meant for special students...

I started to touch my body, I felt nothing abnormal. It's completely gone.

I'm completely healed.

Water elementals and magic sure can heal any injuries pretty quickly and completely. Even if my limbs were torn off, it can still be reattached and operate at least 95% well.

What happened to them...? Are they alright— the shadow said he wouldn't kill them.

“...Nnn...”

Such a cute sound.

It's a girl. Sitting on a chair, her upper body is lying on the bed.

Kuroyuki Shiroha...! You are alright...

...Everything. It's all my fault...!

"Finally, you are awake."

As those feelings of guiltiness continued to strongly resonate in my mind... The principal walks in casually to this room in his usual getup.

"How reckless of you, brat. Simply trying to get the black sword in the basement on your third day without any preparation." He mumbled.

He seems vexed. He sighed and sat down on a chair that he simply took from the doctor's desk.

Right now, there's no one but three of us inside this room. Kuroyuki is asleep. So it's only two of us.

I adjusted myself on the bed, sitting and facing him while giving him a straight look with my eyes.

"Yes... but I still got the sword—"

"...and almost get yourself killed. How stupid."

I can feel a vein popped on my forehead.

But yet his words aren't wrong either, I'm the only one who's at the brink of death.

"I will tell you what you wanted to hear. But I only have the ending half. If you want to know the rest, ask her." The principal said in a tired voice.

...This old man. Did he know something...?

"After I granted permission to the workers and heard the news of Blaze's injuries, I went and check on him. As soon as I was told by the infirmary workers that the 'new student' is at the basement, I quickly went there."

Then what about the barrier and the black wall—

"I broke the two barrier layers with magic, of course. There was nothing left but cold ice, and this girl seems to be stabbing something. Too bad, the thing she was stabbing disappeared before I can even get a clear view." As he said, he sighed.

He seems disappointed about the 'thing' that disappeared.

"What about the rest? She should have told you, right?"

"Ho. Aren't you quite sharp? But I shouldn't, the incident of the black sword was supposed to be highly classified. I already broke the rules just by telling you the ending half."

"Can't I, a special student at least get to know a clearer details of that incident? Besides, I'm one of the special recommended student by you—" I refuted.



"To be exact, you are a victim and the cause of this incident. Furthermore, you dragged one special ranked and five S ranked students into this incident too. I'm supposed to punish you but I helped you to silence the other executives members, aren't you supposed to be grateful to me?"

Even though it sounds wrong but... he's right. But even so...

"I can't tell you anything, but she can." The principal made quite a sly remark.

...I wondered. That shadow has been trying to knock everyone out just to have a private conversation with Kuroyuki. I guess she wouldn't tell me.

As I look at Kuroyuki, I remembered something else.

"...How are those five...? Are they...?" I asked.

"Dead? Don't make me laugh, brat. You are the only one with a fatal injury. Those brats are livelier than you."

They are fine after all...? Looks like my prediction is right on track.

"Just what are you brats made of? Having broken bones, a hole through the abdomen and even crushed bone and organs. But it still means like nothing for you brats."

As the principal murmured, he scans me with his eyes.

No. They are the monsters here, not me. Please stop looking at me with such serious eyes.

"Anyways, try to take care of your <Winter Princess> will you? Using her powers while wearing such a strong sealing ring that's restraining her isn't good for her at all. Her powers have been forcefully released, she's even more tired than you now."

A sealing ring...? The shadow did mentioned before, it's one of the top class seals.

"But still, I never imagined that even the <Winter Princess> would help you." The principal stares at Kuroyuki with a troubled look.

"What do you mean?"

The moment I asked, the principal heaved a long sigh. He then looks at me with a vexed look as he rubbed his forehead with his finger.

"This young lady, is such a pain in the arse. Not a single teacher from my academy is able or dare to teach her anything, she herself is even better than them. She cause quite a ruckus on the entrance ceremony. After being confessed too many times, she rejected to be friends with anyone no matter they are guys or girls. She was elected to be the First Year's Student Council President after a month, but she refuses to recruit any members and she does everything all by herself."

"I think you are starting to get out of topic—"

The principal ignored me by continuing his blabber.

“But after her election after five months, she suddenly threw away her position. Forcing the blonde hair girl Persia Silverlight to be the First Year Student’s chairman. Yet it’s also surprising that she works even faster and better than the current team. What an irony, isn’t it? Buhahahahaha!”

He laughed stupidly without a care.

“Erm—”

Principal or not, I really wanted to hit you with my sword. Hmm... where is it?

“Anyways, we tried to find a partner for her but yet she rejected all of them. Except you... even though I did say the usual ‘whatever you like’... Till now I still can’t believe why she chose you. Really, what did you do to her...?”

He smirked. What’s with those laughing eyes...

“Please stop making your own conclusions and forcing it onto me— like her.”

“...and there’s still one more thing.”

The principal opened his window and flicked a file, sending it into my device.

“This is one of the school’s important access system that only special students and the Student Council Presidents has. Obviously, her too.”

Important access system...? I have a feeling that it’s a different system compared to the Student Council Presidents.

“I will check on it later...”

Even after listen to what I said, the principal sat there— he seems to be waiting for an answer.

.....Really?

“I didn’t do anything to her, okay? The reason she quitted as being Student Council President it’s because there’s too much to do!”

“Oh~! As expected of you brat! This makes you even more qualified to do this next task! Be prepared!”

...Next task...? When is it...?

“Oh, right.”

The principal pulled out a sword— the black sword out from his magic circle. He then gently placed it on the left side of my bed.

No wonder... so he’s been holding it all along.

“Isn’t this supposed to be confiscated...?” I asked.

After all, it was highly classified... it's not supposed to be shown in public.

"If I did, then all of your hard work will turn out to be nothing. You deserved it. After all, no one in this academy is able to pull out this sword in all these years except you."

As he said, I saw him unconsciously whispered something else. Even though my ears are pretty confident in hearing... but I can't heard a single thing.

"Whoops. I better go now, there's still tons of things to do. Especially your report."

The principal stands and exits the infirmary room sluggishly.

...Especially my report. Do you really need to make such a sarcastic remark?

I have a feeling... there's something important the principal is hiding. Whatever it is, I can tell at least it isn't something with bad intentions.

Hah... can't he just make things as simple as possible...?

...Kuroyuki, can't you wake up already? The principal is talking bad things about you that loudly but yet you still kept on sleeping with a cute face.

...Come to think of it, she really treats me differently compared to the others. But I'm the second person qualified to be a special student. So is this the reason she's been placing me into the same status quo as her?

Superficially, she's an unreasonable girl that doesn't care your opinion. But deep down, she's really nice. It would be heaven if she's my girlfriend, from the looks of it, it's impossible.

Huh...? When did my hand...

"Kuroyuki... Thank you."

As I stroked her head, my voice unintentionally leaked out. My feelings of appreciation and guilt, constantly swirls inside my mind.

...Such a bad habit. I did this so many times to my little sis and magical pet, they really like it when I pat their heads. It makes them happy.

How many times has it been already? I loss count.

I bet Kuroyuki would have killed me if she found out I'm stroking her head again. But it's so irresistible...! My hand refuses to leave her!

"C-C-Cold...!" I inadvertently cried.

Kuroyuki suddenly grabs my hand.

Oh no... she's awake what should I do what should I do...!?

"WAIT PLEASE DON'T KILL ME WHAT I DID IS JUST TO WAKE YOU UP!!! EH...?"

Kuroyuki jerked my whole body close to her, she pounced forth and hugged me.

“...Thank goodness...”

Her voice was so quiet that I wasn't sure if I had heard her or not. She seems to be enlightened that the fact I'm alive.

Ugh... So soft...! Stop hugging me already or else I will really get addicted to this...!

Kuroyuki slowly fall back while releasing her arms.

“...I'm sorry... for not being able to protect you...”

Her voice trembled as she frantically wiped away her tears.

“...I always thought that... it's easy to protect just a single person but yet... I couldn't do anything...”

She stifled her sobbing voice and her voice became strained.

She looked pained as she did her best to hold back her emotions, biting her lips.

...I don't have the words in me.

I was frustrated at myself for saying nothing.

I could only offer condolences that could not be put into words.

I rubbed Kuroyuki's head as gently as I could.

I wished that her tear-filled eyes will not spill over.

Those tears were filled with anxiety, sadness, and happiness.

She smiled all she could before me but yet, it was the faintest of smiles— one that seemed as if it would disappeared at any moment.

What's with this relationship between us...? Could it be that she—?

“...Now die.”

She forged a spear and thrusts for my head, which I stopped it by grabbing with my hand.

“WHAT'S WITH THIS TURN OF TIDE!? JUST A SECOND AGO YOU ARE RELIEVED THAT I'M ALIVE, AND NOW YOU WANTED ME TO BE DEAD!?”

“...you stroke my head again. That's cheating.” Kuroyuki muttered with her cheeks a little red.

“What you said doesn't make any sense at all.”

I don't understand girls at all, despite living six years together with two girls.

“Lucifer!!!”

Persia? Wha— when did she—

She suddenly appeared on the other side of my bed...

“Urk!”

“Thank goodness... thank goodness...!”

...and pounced right at me and hugged me tightly, burying her head on my chest.

It’s a déjà vu.

But yet she’s crying. Her tears are filled with happiness, but yet sadness at the same time.

“It’s alright. Don’t cry.”

I patted her head. Rubbing as gently as I could.

“Don’t ever do something so stupid again, okay...?” Persia pouted.

“Alright, I pro— what do you mean by stupid!?”

STUPID...? AH~ I SEE. DO YOU WANT TO PICK A FIGHT?

“Do you think I will be happy if you died!? You have a family too don’t ever do something so reckless...!”

Persia raised her voice. She looks straight at me with her tear-filled eyes and hits me repeatedly with those harmless fists of hers as she uttered those words.

“...!”

Those words etched deeply into my heart.

The always carefree and childish looking Persia... is actually a very mature girl. But even so...

“...I’m the one who brought all of you there at the first place. So I’m the one who should be responsible—”

“...The moment we decided to go together with you, we already prepared ourselves for things like this to happen.”

Kuroyuki interrupted my apologetic words.

“You knew we are strong enough to protect ourselves, you knew it...! So why...!” Persia muttered.

“...I don’t know. My body moved by its own. Ahaha...”

“Hmph...! Apologize now!”

Persia squeezed me tighter with her arms.

“Yeah... I`m sorry.”

I stroked Persia`s head, comforting her.

What`s with this feeling... as if we are being stared at.

“...Please come in, NOW.” Kuroyuki spoke in a cold-icy tone.

After she said so, everyone outside panicked and quickly rush into this room.

The moment Persia realize they are coming in, she quickly release her hands and tidy herself.

Blaze was the first one that stands in front of me.

“Err... Thank you for saving me. I`m really grateful on what you did from releasing me from that magic.” He murmured, giving a slight bow.

It seems he`s aware of his previous condition. Did he learn of that from the principal? Anyways, the ‘real’ Crimson Veludora Blaze seems pretty nice. I`m a little freak out.

Based on his speech and actions, he`s not different than any human... actually, way more polite.

“Ah... Well...” To be honest, I`m actually a little embarrassed.

“Please let me cook to repay you.” He demanded.

“How about now? I`m starving.” I replied.

I`m really hungry, just for how long am I out?

“Us too~! After all, it`s almost time for dinner~” Persia said.

Huh? Did Persia said di—

Magic circles appeared...! It`s time for me.

“Ku— Grk!!!”

Black daggers flew out from the magic circles, stabbing me.

It hurts, it hurts so much...!

As the large magic circle flew out, Kuroyuki and Persia quickly reach their hands for the large sword.

But it`s no use. I tried...

Their hands pass through the large sword like there`s nothing. The sword stabbed me.

“ARGHHHHH!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

After the scream of pain, what`s left was nothing but silence.

Everyone who witness this are in total shock, except Rumelia.

“Hah... let`s go then shall we? Stop looking at me with that pale and freaked out look.” I said.

There`s nothing you can do about it. I tried for so many years.

“O-Okay...” Persia murmured.

I hope Blaze`s food is edible. After all, dragon`s taste buds are horrible.

4-6

Why that look?

...Are you really that shocked?

It's just the special class, of course our facilities is the best.

Hello? Are you guys dead or something?

I sway my hand in front of Blaze, August and Kronos. Their mouths are hanging open.

"So this is the special class!? There's so much difference compared to our class?!"

August is envious. Compared to the S class, the special class does look way better than theirs.

"Alright then..." Blaze mumbled.

Huh? When did he...?

Blaze's preparing himself at the kitchen section already, looking excited.

"Stop it, too close. I want personal space."

"I'm included in your 'personal' space. I'm yours."

Those two... are they flirting?

They sat on a large sofa but Kronos is avoiding himself from Rumelia. Rumelia refuses and sticks to Kronos next to him like a glue.

I pulled a chair from the dining table and sat there, with Kuroyuki on my right and Persia on my left.

"Eh~ I really want a class like this... Lucifer, why don't you swap with me~?" Persia said with an innocent voice.

"...No."

You are two days too late to say that. If I hadn't told Kuroyuki about my past and decided to help her and let her help me in return, I would have said yes.

But Persia herself knew it. She just wanted to tease me.

"If you do I will let you stroke my head~"

Persia leaned her head closer to me, as if it's going to touch my shoulder.

"What do you even think I am? A pervert...?" I retorted.

"...To be accurate, he's a stalker."



Kuroyuki`s sudden interjection made me unable to react. In fact, I`m still quite surprised she`s still labelling me as a stalker, despite how many times I told her not to.

“Stop labelling me as a stalker.” I replied to Kuroyuki.

“I didn`t expect you to be such a stalker...” Persia pulled back her body and make a defensive stance around her chest.

“Stop looking at me with those eyes that`s seeing me as a stalker.” I refuted.

“...you are lucky to sit next to me.” Kuroyuki said confidently.

In another words, what she meant is ‘so you can stalk me every day’.

“Scary, without fail either~” Persia grinned.

This girl... she definitely know what it meant. I always thought she`s stupid.

“If that`s the case... perhaps I should peek when you bath—”

PAK! (The sound of Kuroyuki`s hand on my face)

“...say that again.” She spoke in a cold tone.

“...I`m sorry.”

“I don`t mind if you want to peek on me~”

Kuroyuki`s hand twitched.

“Oi, oi, Kuroyuki why are you increasing your strength....?”

“...perverts should die after all.”

CRACK!

“AARRGGHHH!!!!? THAT HURTS HURRY UP AND LET GO!?”

Kuroyuki lifted my body with just only one hand. What strength.

“...Rumelia, open the window.” She uttered.

Rumelia walks to the nearest window and she really opened it. Kuroyuki drags my body and stop just by the window.

“WAIT!? YOU CAN`T BE SERIOUS!?”

If she did threw me out from the window, I will definitely be fine since it`s only the second floor. But it will be really embarrassing from getting thrown out the window by a girl.

“...Of course not.” Kuroyuki releases me.

I lifelessly sat on the ground.

"Are you okay?" Persia walks to me and asked politely.

Shut up. You are the one who caused this.

"Blaze finished his cooking already so can you stop with the acting already~?"

She's such a demon. My head still hurts like hell, why don't you come here and let me test it on you?

I realized all of them are waiting for me at the dining table.

Hmm... the food does looks stunning. But the main thing is the taste.

As I observe, I sat on my seat.

"Sorry Blaze, but... is this edible?"

Even though it's rude, but I heard rumours that some food without poison is able to kill people.

"Oi. Blaze took the first place in the spring cooking contest you know?"

August looks at me annoyingly and protest.

Wait, what? If it's a contest, surely Kuroyuki would have joined it. And that means...

"...your cooking is even better than hers...?" As I said, I pointed at Kuroyuki.

Other then Kuroyuki, Persia and Rumelia, the others looks a little surprised. I don't really understand.

It's just Kuroyuki's cooking... so why do they look surprised? It seems they never imagined Kuroyuki will cook for someone else.

"Haha, you are welcome." Blaze laughed proudly.

A sizzling plate with a piece of meat and some sparkly sauce is placed in front of me.

What is inside of this? I wondered.

It smells nice. I took a fork and took a small piece.

OH MY GOD HOLY WHAT ON EARTH IS THIS!?

No words can describe it's flavour, it's richness, it's deliciousness to make you want to it more and more...!

"Amazing. Perhaps not even a skilled cook can do so."

Even Kuroyuki's cooking doesn't even achieve such perfection. You deserve it.

“Thank you.” Blaze gave a smirk.

But soon, none of us spoke another word. This lasted long till everyone ate and left, except Persia.

She`s been sitting at her seat quietly till I finished mine.

The moment I finished my food and look at her, she opened a window.

“About your seal... there`s someone that might know more about it.”

Her tone is serious. Or rather, she`s being serious right now.

“Here.”

She flings a small window in front of me, displaying the information about a student.

Kuroyuki took interest in it and looks together with me.

It`s a girl.

With a long curly leaf green colour hair, a shining silver eyes, what`s more... she`s a beauty. An elf beauty. Too bad it isn`t a full scale data.

Lefiya Rios Challia.

16 years old, same as me.

Class A and Ranked 9<sup>th</sup>. Wait what? Class A but on the 9<sup>th</sup> place...?

Specialize in magic but poor in physical and melee attacks.

Specialize in magic...? Magic, huh?

“Thanks, Persia.”

Persia swipes her fingers and closes the window, including the one I`m looking at.

She then looks at me with a smirk, as if it`s telling me I`m owing her a favour.

“Alright, just say what you want.” I sighed.

“I want a date~!”

.....Huh?

Am I hearing things? Did she openly asks me to date her? What is this... a confession? No that doesn`t seems like it... Is this a joke—?

“Take me for a date~!”

How can you say it in such a cheerful expression!? Not blushing even the slightest!?

No, no, no, what should I do? If my cute little sis found out she will kill me... No doubt that she will definitely find out our date if we really did...

I sent an eye signal to Kuroyuki, pleading her to help me.

Yes! She noticed my signal, now how is she going to help me...?

"...Enjoy your date." Kuroyuki said.

"Thank you~"

"Why are you celebrating your success already!? I haven't give an answer—"

"Is that a no...?"

Persia's looking at me with teary eyes. I can't be tame by those eyes...!

"You see, even though I really wanted to but..."

"It's a yes then~?"

No good, it's no use. I need to speak the truth.

"My little sis is going to kill me."

Now they will think that my little sis is a brother-con even though she really is one...!

"Don't worry~ my little brother definitely will kill you if he finds out that I go for a date with a guy~"

Ah. A sis-con maniac...? This makes two persons trying to kill me...

"Ugh... fine then."

I can't reject her. It's too cruel to do this to her.

But I definitely won't tell my little sis no matter what...! I guess...

...The date tomorrow should be inevitable.

Since the school will be off tomorrow, it will be a chance for me to explore the central district on this island as well.

"Alright then... time to clean it up." I said.

Kuroyuki helps me to take the dishes and Persia cleans the table.

As soon as we are finished, Kuroyuki went to her room and I sent Persia off.

"Thanks for the help." I said.

"Remember, tomorrow at ten!" Persia said cheerfully.

“Yeah, but you will be the one who’s late though.”

“Meanie...!” She pouted and fold her hands, looking to the other side.

“.....”

Persia stood near the door, I’m waiting for her to leave. But yet, she’s not.

What is she waiting for...?

“...Don’t you... have something to say...?”

She stared straight at me and blinked her eyes for a few times.

Ah.

“Bye and goodnight.”

“Goodnight~!” She smiled sweetly.

As soon as she turned around and gave a wave on a hand, I closed the door with a flick of my finger.

I walked to the back of the classroom and opened the door towards me room.

I clapped my hands two times, all the devices in the classroom closed instantly.

“Huh. Not bad.”

As expected from me. I hacked the system inside this room for me to make everything easy.

And something else...

Whatever it is...

...it’s no big deal.

Now then... for tomorrow, a date with Persia, exploring the central district—

.....and Lefiya Rios Challia.



Lucifer Nightwalker von Nightmare



Kuroyuki Shiroha (黒雪 白羽)



Persia Silverlight